HENRY IV Part 2 By WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

Edited by BARBARA A. MOWAT and PAUL WERSTINE

Folger Shakespeare Library

http://www.folgerdigitaltexts.org

Contents

From the Director of the Folger Shakespeare Library Front **Textual Introduction** Matter Synopsis Characters in the Play Induction Scene 1 ACT 1 Scene 2 Scene 3 Scene 1 Scene 2 ACT 2 Scene 3 Scene 4 Scene 1 ACT 3 Scene 2 Scene 1 ACT 4 Scene 2 Scene 3 Scene 1 Scene 2 ACT 5 Scene 3 Scene 4 Scene 5

Epilogue

From the Director of the Folger Shakespeare Library

It is hard to imagine a world without Shakespeare. Since their composition four hundred years ago, Shakespeare's plays and poems have traveled the globe, inviting those who see and read his works to make them their own.

Readers of the New Folger Editions are part of this ongoing process of "taking up Shakespeare," finding our own thoughts and feelings in language that strikes us as old or unusual and, for that very reason, new. We still struggle to keep up with a writer who could think a mile a minute, whose words paint pictures that shift like clouds. These expertly edited texts are presented to the public as a resource for study, artistic adaptation, and enjoyment. By making the classic texts of the New Folger Editions available in electronic form as Folger Digital Texts, we place a trusted resource in the hands of anyone who wants them.

The New Folger Editions of Shakespeare's plays, which are the basis for the texts realized here in digital form, are special because of their origin. The Folger Shakespeare Library in Washington, DC, is the single greatest documentary source of Shakespeare's works. An unparalleled collection of early modern books, manuscripts, and artwork connected to Shakespeare, the Folger's holdings have been consulted extensively in the preparation of these texts. The Editions also reflect the expertise gained through the regular performance of Shakespeare's works in the Folger's Elizabethan Theater.

I want to express my deep thanks to editors Barbara Mowat and Paul Werstine for creating these indispensable editions of Shakespeare's works, which incorporate the best of textual scholarship with a richness of commentary that is both inspired and engaging. Readers who want to know more about Shakespeare and his plays can follow the paths these distinguished scholars have tread by visiting the Folger either in-person or online, where a range of physical and digital resources exist to supplement the material in these texts. I commend to you these words, and hope that they inspire.

Michael Witmore Director, Folger Shakespeare Library

Textual Introduction By Barbara Mowat and Paul Werstine

Until now, with the release of the Folger Digital Texts, readers in search of a free online text of Shakespeare's plays had to be content primarily with using the MobyTM Text, which reproduces a latenineteenth century version of the plays. What is the difference? Many ordinary readers assume that there is a single text for the plays: what Shakespeare wrote. But Shakespeare's plays were not published the way modern novels or plays are published today: as a single, authoritative text. In some cases, the plays have come down to us in multiple published versions, represented by various Quartos (Qq) and by the great collection put together by his colleagues in 1623, called the First Folio (F). There are, for example, three very different versions of Hamlet, two of King Lear, Henry V, Romeo and Juliet, and others. Editors choose which version to use as their base text, and then amend that text with words, lines or speech prefixes from the other versions that, in their judgment, make for a better or more accurate text.

Other editorial decisions involve choices about whether an unfamiliar word could be understood in light of other writings of the period or whether it should be changed; decisions about words that made it into Shakespeare's text by accident through four hundred years of printings and misprinting; and even decisions based on cultural preference and taste. When the MobyTM Text was created, for example, it was deemed "improper" and "indecent" for Miranda to chastise Caliban for having attempted to rape her. (See *The Tempest*, 1.2: "Abhorred slave,/Which any print of goodness wilt not take,/Being capable of all ill! I pitied thee..."). All Shakespeare editors at the time took the speech away from her and gave it to her father, Prospero.

The editors of the MobyTM Shakespeare produced their text long before scholars fully understood the proper grounds on which to make the thousands of decisions that Shakespeare editors face. The Folger Library Shakespeare Editions, on which the Folger Digital Texts depend, make this editorial process as nearly transparent as is possible, in contrast to older texts, like the MobyTM, which hide editorial interventions. The reader of the Folger Shakespeare knows where the text has been altered because editorial interventions are signaled by square brackets (for example, from *Othello*: "[If she in chains of magic were not bound,]"), half-square brackets (for example, from *Henry V*: "With <code>Folood</code> and sword and fire to win your right."). or angle brackets (for example, from *Hamlet*: "O farewell.

honest (soldier.) Who hath relieved/you?"). At any point in the text, you can hover your cursor over a bracket for more information.

Because the Folger Digital Texts are edited in accord with twenty-first century knowledge about Shakespeare's texts, the Folger here provides them to readers, scholars, teachers, actors, directors, and students, free of charge, confident of their quality as texts of the plays and pleased to be able to make this contribution to the study and enjoyment of Shakespeare.

Synopsis

Henry IV, Part 2, continues the story of Henry IV, Part I.

Northumberland learns that his son Hotspur is dead, and he rejoins the remaining rebels. When Hotspur's widow convinces Northumberland to withdraw, the rebels are then led by the archbishop of York and Lords Mowbray and Hastings, who muster at York to confront the king's forces.

Sir John Falstaff, meanwhile, glories in the reputation he has gained by falsely claiming to have killed Hotspur, and he uses his wit and cunning to escape charges by the Lord Chief Justice. Prince Hal and his companion Poins disguise themselves to observe Falstaff, and they hear him insult them both. After they confront him, Prince Hal and Falstaff must return to the wars. The king's army is again victorious, but more through deceit and false promises than through valor.

With the rebellion over, Prince Hal attends his dying father. Hal becomes Henry V, reassures the Lord Chief Justice, and turns away Falstaff, who had expected royal favor.

Characters in the Play

Rumor, Presenter of the Induction KING HENRY IV, formerly Henry Bolingbroke PRINCE HAL, Prince of Wales and heir to the throne, later King Henry V JOHN OF LANCASTER younger sons of King Henry IV THOMAS OF CLARENCE Humphrey of Gloucester Earl of Northumberland, Henry Percy NORTHUMBERLAND'S WIFE LADY PERCY, widow of Hotspur Richard Scroop, Archbishop of York LORD MOWBRAY LORD HASTINGS in rebellion against King Henry IV LORD BARDOLPH TRAVERS Morton SIR JOHN COLEVILE EARL OF WESTMORELAND EARL OF WARWICK EARL OF SURREY SIR JOHN BLUNT GOWER HARCOURT LORD CHIEF JUSTICE SIR JOHN FALSTAFF **POINS** BARDOLPH **P**ETO PISTOL FALSTAFF'S PAGE Hostess of the tavern (also called Mistress Quickly) DOLL TEARSHEET JUSTICE ROBERT SHALLOW JUSTICE SILENCE Davy, servant to Shallow Mouldy Shadow

men of Gloucestershire

WART

Feeble
Bullcalf
Fang
Snare

London officers

Epilogue

Drawers, Musicians, Beadles, Grooms, Messenger, Soldiers, Lords, Attendants, Porter, Servants

⟨INDUCTION⟩

Enter Rumor, painted full of tongues.

	RUMOR I	
FTLN 0001	Open your ears, for which of you will stop	
FTLN 0002	The vent of hearing when loud Rumor speaks?	
FTLN 0003	I, from the orient to the drooping west,	
FTLN 0004	Making the wind my post-horse, still unfold	
FTLN 0005	The acts commenced on this ball of earth.	5
FTLN 0006	Upon my tongues continual slanders ride,	
FTLN 0007	The which in every language I pronounce,	
FTLN 0008	Stuffing the ears of men with false reports.	
FTLN 0009	I speak of peace while covert enmity	
FTLN 0010	Under the smile of safety wounds the world.	10
FTLN 0011	And who but Rumor, who but only I,	
FTLN 0012	Make fearful musters and prepared defense	
FTLN 0013	Whiles the big year, swoll'n with some other grief,	
FTLN 0014	Is thought with child by the stern tyrant war,	
FTLN 0015	And no such matter? Rumor is a pipe	15
FTLN 0016	Blown by surmises, jealousies, conjectures,	
FTLN 0017	And of so easy and so plain a stop	
FTLN 0018	That the blunt monster with uncounted heads,	
FTLN 0019	The still-discordant wav'ring multitude,	
FTLN 0020	Can play upon it. But what need I thus	20
FTLN 0021	My well-known body to anatomize	
FTLN 0022	Among my household? Why is Rumor here?	
FTLN 0023	I run before King Harry's victory,	

FTLN 0024	Who in a bloody field by Shrewsbury	
FTLN 0025	Hath beaten down young Hotspur and his troops,	25
FTLN 0026	Quenching the flame of bold rebellion	
FTLN 0027	Even with the rebels' blood. But what mean I	
FTLN 0028	To speak so true at first? My office is	
FTLN 0029	To noise abroad that Harry Monmouth fell	
FTLN 0030	Under the wrath of noble Hotspur's sword,	30
FTLN 0031	And that the King before the Douglas' rage	
FTLN 0032	Stooped his anointed head as low as death.	
FTLN 0033	This have I rumored through the peasant towns	
FTLN 0034	Between that royal field of Shrewsbury	
FTLN 0035	And this worm-eaten hold of ragged stone,	35
FTLN 0036	(Where) Hotspur's father, old Northumberland,	
FTLN 0037	Lies crafty-sick. The posts come tiring on,	
FTLN 0038	And not a man of them brings other news	
FTLN 0039	Than they have learnt of me. From Rumor's	
FTLN 0040	tongues	40
FTLN 0041	They bring smooth comforts false, worse than	
FTLN 0042	true wrongs.	
	[Rumor] exits.	

(Scene [1]) Enter the Lord Bardolph at one door.

LORD BARDOLPH

FTLN 0043

Who keeps the gate here, ho? ^TEnter the Porter. [¬] Where is the Earl? FTLN 0044 **PORTER** What shall I say you are? FTLN 0045 LORD BARDOLPH Tell thou the Earl FTLN 0046 That the Lord Bardolph doth attend him here. 5 FTLN 0047 **PORTER** His Lordship is walked forth into the orchard. FTLN 0048 Please it your Honor knock but at the gate FTLN 0049 And he himself will answer. FTLN 0050 Enter the Earl Northumberland, his head wrapped in a kerchief and supporting himself with a crutch. Here comes the Earl. FTLN 0051 LORD BARDOLPH 「Porter exits. ¬ NORTHUMBERLAND What news, Lord Bardolph? Every minute now 10 FTLN 0052 Should be the father of some stratagem. FTLN 0053 The times are wild. Contention, like a horse FTLN 0054

11

ETI N 0055	Full of high fooding, madly both broke loose	
FTLN 0055	Full of high feeding, madly hath broke loose And bears down all before him.	
FTLN 0056	LORD BARDOLPH Noble earl,	15
FTLN 0057 FTLN 0058	I bring you certain news from Shrewsbury.	13
11LN 0038	NORTHUMBERLAND	
FTLN 0059	Good, an God will!	
FTLN 0060	LORD BARDOLPH As good as heart can wish.	
FTLN 0061	The King is almost wounded to the death,	
FTLN 0062	And, in the fortune of my lord your son,	20
FTLN 0063	Prince Harry slain outright; and both the Blunts	20
FTLN 0064	Killed by the hand of Douglas; young Prince John	
FTLN 0065	And Westmoreland and Stafford fled the field;	
FTLN 0066	And Harry Monmouth's brawn, the hulk Sir John,	
FTLN 0067	Is prisoner to your son. O, such a day,	25
FTLN 0068	So fought, so followed, and so fairly won,	
FTLN 0069	Came not till now to dignify the times	
FTLN 0070	Since Caesar's fortunes.	
FTLN 0071	NORTHUMBERLAND How is this derived?	
FTLN 0072	Saw you the field? Came you from Shrewsbury?	30
	LORD BARDOLPH	
FTLN 0073	I spake with one, my lord, that came from thence,	
FTLN 0074	A gentleman well bred and of good name,	
FTLN 0075	That freely rendered me these news for true.	
	Enter Travers.	
	NORTHUMBERLAND	
FTLN 0076	Here comes my servant Travers, who I sent	
FTLN 0070	On Tuesday last to listen after news.	35
TILN 00//	LORD BARDOLPH	33
FTLN 0078	My lord, I overrode him on the way,	
FTLN 0079	And he is furnished with no certainties	
FTLN 0080	More than he haply may retail from me.	
	NORTHUMBERLAND	
FTLN 0081	Now, Travers, what good tidings comes with you?	
	TRAVERS	
FTLN 0082	My lord, Sir John Umfrevile turned me back	40

FTLN 0083	With joyful tidings and, being better horsed,	
FTLN 0084	Outrode me. After him came spurring hard	
FTLN 0085	A gentleman, almost forspent with speed,	
FTLN 0086	That stopped by me to breathe his bloodied horse.	
FTLN 0087	He asked the way to Chester, and of him	45
FTLN 0088	I did demand what news from Shrewsbury.	
FTLN 0089	He told me that rebellion had bad luck	
FTLN 0090	And that young Harry Percy's spur was cold.	
FTLN 0091	With that he gave his able horse the head	
FTLN 0092	And, bending forward, struck his armèd heels	50
FTLN 0093	Against the panting sides of his poor jade	
FTLN 0094	Up to the rowel-head, and starting so	
FTLN 0095	He seemed in running to devour the way,	
FTLN 0096	Staying no longer question.	
FTLN 0097	NORTHUMBERLAND Ha? Again:	55
FTLN 0098	Said he young Harry Percy's spur was cold?	
FTLN 0099	Of Hotspur, Coldspur? That rebellion	
FTLN 0100	Had met ill luck?	
FTLN 0101	LORD BARDOLPH My lord, I'll tell you what:	
FTLN 0102	If my young lord your son have not the day,	60
FTLN 0103	Upon mine honor, for a silken point	
FTLN 0104	I'll give my barony. Never talk of it.	
	NORTHUMBERLAND	
FTLN 0105	Why should that gentleman that rode by Travers	
FTLN 0106	Give then such instances of loss?	
FTLN 0107	LORD BARDOLPH Who, he?	65
FTLN 0108	He was some hilding fellow that had stol'n	
FTLN 0109	The horse he rode on and, upon my life,	
FTLN 0110	Spoke at a venture.	
	Enter Morton.	
FTLN 0111	Look, here comes more news.	
FTLN 0112	Yea, this man's brow, like to a title leaf,	70
FTLN 0113	Foretells the nature of a tragic volume.	70

FTLN 0114	So looks the strand whereon the imperious flood	
FTLN 0115	Hath left a witnessed usurpation.—	
FTLN 0116	Say, Morton, didst thou come from Shrewsbury?	
	MORTON	
FTLN 0117	I ran from Shrewsbury, my noble lord,	75
FTLN 0118	Where hateful death put on his ugliest mask	
FTLN 0119	To fright our party.	
FTLN 0120	NORTHUMBERLAND How doth my son and brother?	
FTLN 0121	Thou tremblest, and the whiteness in thy cheek	
FTLN 0122	Is apter than thy tongue to tell thy errand.	80
FTLN 0123	Even such a man, so faint, so spiritless,	
FTLN 0124	So dull, so dead in look, so woebegone,	
FTLN 0125	Drew Priam's curtain in the dead of night	
FTLN 0126	And would have told him half his Troy was burnt;	
FTLN 0127	But Priam found the fire ere he his tongue,	85
FTLN 0128	And I my Percy's death ere thou report'st it.	
FTLN 0129	This thou wouldst say: "Your son did thus and thus;	
FTLN 0130	Your brother thus; so fought the noble Douglas"—	
FTLN 0131	Stopping my greedy ear with their bold deeds.	
FTLN 0132	But in the end, to stop my ear indeed,	90
FTLN 0133	Thou hast a sigh to blow away this praise,	
FTLN 0134	Ending with "Brother, son, and all are dead."	
	MORTON	
FTLN 0135	Douglas is living, and your brother yet,	
FTLN 0136	But for my lord your son—	
FTLN 0137	NORTHUMBERLAND Why, he is dead.	95
FTLN 0138	See what a ready tongue suspicion hath!	
FTLN 0139	He that but fears the thing he would not know	
FTLN 0140	Hath, by instinct, knowledge from others' eyes	
FTLN 0141	That what he feared is chanced. Yet speak,	
FTLN 0142	Morton.	100
FTLN 0143	Tell thou an earl his divination lies,	
FTLN 0144	And I will take it as a sweet disgrace	
FTLN 0145	And make thee rich for doing me such wrong.	
	MORTON	
FTLN 0146	You are too great to be by me gainsaid,	
FTLN 0147	Your spirit is too true, your fears too certain.	105

	NORTHUMBERLAND	
FTLN 0148	Yet, for all this, say not that Percy's dead.	
FTLN 0149	I see a strange confession in thine eye.	
FTLN 0150	Thou shak'st thy head and hold'st it fear or sin	
FTLN 0151	To speak a truth. If he be slain, (say so.)	
FTLN 0152	The tongue offends not that reports his death;	110
FTLN 0153	And he doth sin that doth belie the dead,	
FTLN 0154	Not he which says the dead is not alive.	
FTLN 0155	Yet the first bringer of unwelcome news	
FTLN 0156	Hath but a losing office, and his tongue	
FTLN 0157	Sounds ever after as a sullen bell	115
FTLN 0158	Remembered tolling a departing friend.	
	LORD BARDOLPH	
FTLN 0159	I cannot think, my lord, your son is dead.	
	MORTON, [to Northumberland]	
FTLN 0160	I am sorry I should force you to believe	
FTLN 0161	That which I would to God I had not seen,	
FTLN 0162	But these mine eyes saw him in bloody state,	120
FTLN 0163	Rend'ring faint quittance, wearied and outbreathed,	
FTLN 0164	To Harry Monmouth, whose swift wrath beat down	
FTLN 0165	The never-daunted Percy to the earth,	
FTLN 0166	From whence with life he never more sprung up.	
FTLN 0167	In few, his death, whose spirit lent a fire	125
FTLN 0168	Even to the dullest peasant in his camp,	
FTLN 0169	Being bruited once, took fire and heat away	
FTLN 0170	From the best-tempered courage in his troops;	
FTLN 0171	For from his mettle was his party steeled,	
FTLN 0172	Which, once in him abated, all the rest	130
FTLN 0173	Turned on themselves, like dull and heavy lead.	
FTLN 0174	And as the thing that's heavy in itself	
FTLN 0175	Upon enforcement flies with greatest speed,	
FTLN 0176	So did our men, heavy in Hotspur's loss,	
FTLN 0177	Lend to this weight such lightness with their fear	135
FTLN 0178	That arrows fled not swifter toward their aim	
FTLN 0179	Than did our soldiers, aiming at their safety,	

FTLN 0180	Fly from the field. Then was that noble Worcester	
FTLN 0181	So soon ta'en prisoner; and that furious Scot,	
FTLN 0182	The bloody Douglas, whose well-laboring sword	140
FTLN 0183	Had three times slain th' appearance of the King,	140
FTLN 0184	Gan vail his stomach and did grace the shame	
FTLN 0185	Of those that turned their backs and in his flight,	
FTLN 0186	Stumbling in fear, was took. The sum of all	
FTLN 0187	Is that the King hath won and hath sent out	145
FTLN 0188	A speedy power to encounter you, my lord,	143
FTLN 0189	Under the conduct of young Lancaster	
FTLN 0190	And Westmoreland. This is the news at full.	
1 1EN 0170	NORTHUMBERLAND	
FTLN 0191	For this I shall have time enough to mourn.	
FTLN 0192	In poison there is physic, and these news,	150
FTLN 0193	Having been well, that would have made me sick,	150
FTLN 0194	Being sick, have in some measure made me well.	
FTLN 0195	And as the wretch whose fever-weakened joints,	
FTLN 0196	Like strengthless hinges, buckle under life,	
FTLN 0197	Impatient of his fit, breaks like a fire	155
FTLN 0198	Out of his keeper's arms, even so my limbs,	
FTLN 0199	Weakened with grief, being now enraged with	
FTLN 0200	grief,	
FTLN 0201	Are thrice themselves. Hence therefore, thou	
FTLN 0202	nice crutch. <i>He throws down his crutch.</i>	160
FTLN 0203	A scaly gauntlet now with joints of steel	
FTLN 0204	Must glove this hand. And hence, thou sickly	
FTLN 0205	coif. <i>He removes his kerchief.</i>	
FTLN 0206	Thou art a guard too wanton for the head	
FTLN 0207	Which princes, fleshed with conquest, aim to hit.	165
FTLN 0208	Now bind my brows with iron, and approach	
FTLN 0209	The ragged'st hour that time and spite dare bring	
FTLN 0210	To frown upon th' enraged Northumberland.	
FTLN 0211	Let heaven kiss Earth! Now let not Nature's hand	
FTLN 0212	Keep the wild flood confined. Let order die,	170
FTLN 0213	And let this world no longer be a stage	

FTLN 0214	To feed contention in a lingering act;	
FTLN 0215	But let one spirit of the firstborn Cain	
FTLN 0216	Reign in all bosoms, that, each heart being set	
FTLN 0217	On bloody courses, the rude scene may end,	175
FTLN 0218	And darkness be the burier of the dead.	
	「LORD BARDOLPH」	
FTLN 0219	[This strained passion doth you wrong, my lord.]	
	MORTON	
FTLN 0220	Sweet earl, divorce not wisdom from your honor.	
FTLN 0221	The lives of all your loving complices	
FTLN 0222	(Lean) on (your) health, the which, if you give o'er	180
FTLN 0223	To stormy passion, must perforce decay.	
FTLN 0224	(You cast th' event of war, my noble lord,	
FTLN 0225	And summed the accompt of chance before you	
FTLN 0226	said	
FTLN 0227	"Let us make head." It was your presurmise	185
FTLN 0228	That in the dole of blows your son might drop.	
FTLN 0229	You knew he walked o'er perils on an edge,	
FTLN 0230	More likely to fall in than to get o'er.	
FTLN 0231	You were advised his flesh was capable	
FTLN 0232	Of wounds and scars, and that his forward spirit	190
FTLN 0233	Would lift him where most trade of danger	
FTLN 0234	ranged.	
FTLN 0235	Yet did you say "Go forth," and none of this,	
FTLN 0236	Though strongly apprehended, could restrain	
FTLN 0237	The stiff-borne action. What hath then befall'n,	195
FTLN 0238	Or what 'did' this bold enterprise bring forth,	
FTLN 0239	More than that being which was like to be?	
	LORD BARDOLPH	
FTLN 0240	We all that are engaged to this loss	
FTLN 0241	Knew that we ventured on such dangerous seas	
FTLN 0242	That if we wrought out life, 'twas ten to one;	200
FTLN 0243	And yet we ventured, for the gain proposed	
FTLN 0244	Choked the respect of likely peril feared;	
FTLN 0245	And since we are o'erset, venture again.	
FTLN 0246	Come, we will all put forth, body and goods.	

	MORTON	
FTLN 0247	'Tis more than time.—And, my most noble lord,	205
FTLN 0248	I hear for certain, and dare speak the truth:	
FTLN 0249	(The gentle Archbishop of York is up	
FTLN 0250	With well-appointed powers. He is a man	
FTLN 0251	Who with a double surety binds his followers.	
FTLN 0252	My lord your son had only but the corpse,	210
FTLN 0253	But shadows and the shows of men, to fight;	
FTLN 0254	For that same word "rebellion" did divide	
FTLN 0255	The action of their bodies from their souls,	
FTLN 0256	And they did fight with queasiness, constrained,	
FTLN 0257	As men drink potions, that their weapons only	215
FTLN 0258	Seemed on our side. But, for their spirits and	
FTLN 0259	souls,	
FTLN 0260	This word "rebellion," it had froze them up	
FTLN 0261	As fish are in a pond. But now the Bishop	
FTLN 0262	Turns insurrection to religion.	220
FTLN 0263	Supposed sincere and holy in his thoughts,	
FTLN 0264	He's followed both with body and with mind,	
FTLN 0265	And doth enlarge his rising with the blood	
FTLN 0266	Of fair King Richard, scraped from Pomfret	
FTLN 0267	stones;	225
FTLN 0268	Derives from heaven his quarrel and his cause;	
FTLN 0269	Tells them he doth bestride a bleeding land,	
FTLN 0270	Gasping for life under great Bolingbroke;	
FTLN 0271	And more and less do flock to follow him.	
	NORTHUMBERLAND	
FTLN 0272	I knew of this before, but, to speak truth,	230
FTLN 0273	This present grief had wiped it from my mind.	
FTLN 0274	Go in with me and counsel every man	
FTLN 0275	The aptest way for safety and revenge.	
FTLN 0276	Get posts and letters, and make friends with speed.	
FTLN 0277	Never so few, and never yet more need.	235
	Th	ey exit.

⟨Scene 「2¬⟩

Enter Sir John (Falstaff,) with his Page bearing his sword and buckler.

FTLN 0278	FALSTAFF Sirrah, you giant, what says the doctor to my	
FTLN 0279	water?	
FTLN 0280	PAGE He said, sir, the water itself was a good healthy	
FTLN 0281	water, but, for the party that owed it, he might have	
FTLN 0282	more diseases than he knew for.	5
FTLN 0283	FALSTAFF Men of all sorts take a pride to gird at me.	
FTLN 0284	The brain of this foolish-compounded clay, man, is	
FTLN 0285	not able to invent anything that intends to laughter	
FTLN 0286	more than I invent, or is invented on me. I am not	
FTLN 0287	only witty in myself, but the cause that wit is in	10
FTLN 0288	other men. I do here walk before thee like a sow	
FTLN 0289	that hath overwhelmed all her litter but one. If the	
FTLN 0290	Prince put thee into my service for any other reason	
FTLN 0291	than to set me off, why then I have no judgment.	
FTLN 0292	Thou whoreson mandrake, thou art fitter to be	15
FTLN 0293	worn in my cap than to wait at my heels. I was never	
FTLN 0294	manned with an agate till now, but I will inset you	
FTLN 0295	neither in gold nor silver, but in vile apparel, and	
FTLN 0296	send you back again to your master for a jewel. The	
FTLN 0297	juvenal, the Prince your master, whose chin is not	20
FTLN 0298	yet fledge—I will sooner have a beard grow in the	
FTLN 0299	palm of my hand than he shall get one off his cheek,	
FTLN 0300	and yet he will not stick to say his face is a face	
FTLN 0301	royal. God may finish it when He will. 'Tis not a hair	
FTLN 0302	amiss yet. He may keep it still at a face royal, for a	25
FTLN 0303	barber shall never earn sixpence out of it, and yet	
FTLN 0304	he'll be crowing as if he had writ man ever since his	
FTLN 0305	father was a bachelor. He may keep his own grace,	
FTLN 0306	but he's almost out of mine, I can assure him. What	
FTLN 0307	said Master Dommelton about the satin for my	30
FTLN 0308	short cloak and my slops?	

FTLN 0309	PAGE He said, sir, you should procure him better	
FTLN 0310	assurance than Bardolph. He would not take his	
FTLN 0311	band and yours. He liked not the security.	
FTLN 0312	FALSTAFF Let him be damned like the glutton! Pray	35
FTLN 0313	God his tongue be hotter! A whoreson Achitophel, a	
FTLN 0314	(rascally) yea-forsooth knave, to bear a gentleman in	
FTLN 0315	hand and then stand upon security! The whoreson	
FTLN 0316	smoothy-pates do now wear nothing but high shoes	
FTLN 0317	and bunches of keys at their girdles; and if a man is	40
FTLN 0318	through with them in honest taking up, then they	
FTLN 0319	must stand upon security. I had as lief they would	
FTLN 0320	put ratsbane in my mouth as offer to stop it with	
FTLN 0321	"security." I looked he should have sent me two-and-twenty	
FTLN 0322	yards of satin, as I am a true knight, and	45
FTLN 0323	he sends me "security." Well, he may sleep in	
FTLN 0324	security, for he hath the horn of abundance, and the	
FTLN 0325	lightness of his wife shines through it, and yet	
FTLN 0326	cannot he see though he have his own lantern to	
FTLN 0327	light him. Where's Bardolph?	50
FTLN 0328	PAGE He's gone in Smithfield to buy your Worship a	
FTLN 0329	horse.	
FTLN 0330	FALSTAFF I bought him in Paul's, and he'll buy me a	
FTLN 0331	horse in Smithfield. An I could get me but a wife in	
FTLN 0332	the stews, I were manned, horsed, and wived.	55
	Enter Lord Chief Justice (and Servant.)	
FTLN 0333	PAGE, <i>to Falstaff</i> Sir, here comes the nobleman that	
FTLN 0334	committed the Prince for striking him about	
FTLN 0335	Bardolph.	
FTLN 0336	FALSTAFF Wait close. I will not see him.	
	They begin to exit.	
FTLN 0337	CHIEF JUSTICE, <i>to Servant</i> What's he that goes there?	60
FTLN 0338	SERVANT Falstaff, an 't please your Lordship.	
FTLN 0339	CHIEF JUSTICE He that was in question for the robbery?	
FTLN 0340	SERVANT He, my lord; but he hath since done good	

FTLN 0341	service at Shrewsbury, and, as I hear, is now going	
FTLN 0342	with some charge to the Lord John of Lancaster.	65
FTLN 0343	CHIEF JUSTICE What, to York? Call him back again.	0.5
FTLN 0344	SERVANT Sir John Falstaff!	
FTLN 0345	FALSTAFF Boy, tell him I am deaf.	
FTLN 0346	PAGE You must speak louder. My master is deaf.	
FTLN 0347	CHIEF JUSTICE I am sure he is, to the hearing of	70
FTLN 0348	anything good.—Go pluck him by the elbow. I must	, ,
FTLN 0349	speak with him.	
FTLN 0350	SERVANT, [plucking Falstaff's sleeve] Sir John!	
FTLN 0351	FALSTAFF What, a young knave and begging? Is there	
FTLN 0352	not wars? Is there not employment? Doth not the	75
FTLN 0353	King lack subjects? Do not the rebels need soldiers?	
FTLN 0354	Though it be a shame to be on any side but one, it is	
FTLN 0355	worse shame to beg than to be on the worst side,	
FTLN 0356	were it worse than the name of rebellion can tell	
FTLN 0357	how to make it.	80
FTLN 0358	SERVANT You mistake me, sir.	
FTLN 0359	FALSTAFF Why sir, did I say you were an honest man?	
FTLN 0360	Setting my knighthood and my soldiership aside, I	
FTLN 0361	had lied in my throat if I had said so.	
FTLN 0362	SERVANT I pray you, sir, then set your knighthood and	85
FTLN 0363	your soldiership aside, and give me leave to tell you,	
FTLN 0364	you lie in your throat if you say I am any other than	
FTLN 0365	an honest man.	
FTLN 0366	FALSTAFF I give thee leave to tell me so? I lay aside that	
FTLN 0367	which grows to me? If thou gett'st any leave of me,	90
FTLN 0368	hang me; if thou tak'st leave, thou wert better be	
FTLN 0369	hanged. You hunt counter. Hence! Avaunt!	
FTLN 0370	SERVANT Sir, my lord would speak with you.	
FTLN 0371	CHIEF JUSTICE Sir John Falstaff, a word with you.	
FTLN 0372	FALSTAFF My good lord. God give your Lordship good	95
FTLN 0373	time of (the) day. I am glad to see your Lordship	
FTLN 0374	abroad. I heard say your Lordship was sick. I hope	
FTLN 0375	your Lordship goes abroad by advice. Your Lordship,	

FTLN 0376 FTLN 0377 FTLN 0378 FTLN 0379	though not clean past your youth, have yet some smack of an ague in you, some relish of the saltness of time in you, and I most humbly beseech your Lordship to have a reverend care of your health.	100
FTLN 0380		
FTLN 0381	CHIEF JUSTICE Sir John, I sent for you before your	105
FTLN 0382 FTLN 0383	expedition to Shrewsbury. FALSTAFF An 't please your Lordship, I hear his Majesty	103
FTLN 0384	is returned with some discomfort from Wales.	
FTLN 0384 FTLN 0385	CHIEF JUSTICE I talk not of his Majesty. You would not	
FTLN 0386	come when I sent for you.	
FTLN 0387	FALSTAFF And I hear, moreover, his Highness is fallen	110
FTLN 0388	into this same whoreson apoplexy.	110
FTLN 0389	CHIEF JUSTICE Well, God mend him. I pray you let me	
FTLN 0390	speak with you.	
FTLN 0391	FALSTAFF This apoplexy, as I take it, is a kind of	
FTLN 0392	lethargy, an 't please your Lordship, a kind of	115
FTLN 0393	sleeping in the blood, a whoreson tingling.	
FTLN 0394	CHIEF JUSTICE What tell you me of it? Be it as it is.	
FTLN 0395	FALSTAFF It hath it original from much grief, from	
FTLN 0396	study, and perturbation of the brain. I have read the	
FTLN 0397	cause of his effects in Galen. It is a kind of deafness.	120
FTLN 0398	CHIEF JUSTICE I think you are fallen into the disease,	
FTLN 0399	for you hear not what I say to you.	
FTLN 0400	FALSTAFF Very well, my lord, very well. Rather, an 't	
FTLN 0401	please you, it is the disease of not listening, the	
FTLN 0402	malady of not marking, that I am troubled withal.	125
FTLN 0403	CHIEF JUSTICE To punish you by the heels would amend	
FTLN 0404	the attention of your ears, and I care not if I do	
FTLN 0405	become your physician.	
FTLN 0406	FALSTAFF I am as poor as Job, my lord, but not so	120
FTLN 0407	patient. Your Lordship may minister the potion of	130
FTLN 0408	imprisonment to me in respect of poverty, but how	
FTLN 0409	I should be your patient to follow your prescriptions,	
FTLN 0410	the wise may make some dram of a scruple,	
FTLN 0411	or indeed a scruple itself.	

FTLN 0412	CHIEF JUSTICE I sent for you, when there were matters	135
FTLN 0414	against you for your life, to come speak with me.	
FTLN 0414	FALSTAFF As I was then advised by my learned counsel	
FTLN 0416	in the laws of this land-service, I did not come.	
FTLN 0416	CHIEF JUSTICE Well, the truth is, Sir John, you live in	1.40
FTLN 0417	great infamy.	140
FTLN 0418	FALSTAFF He that buckles himself in my belt cannot	
FTLN 0419	live in less.	
FTLN 0420	CHIEF JUSTICE Your means are very slender, and your	
FTLN 0421	waste is great.	1.45
FTLN 0422	FALSTAFF I would it were otherwise. I would my means	145
FTLN 0423	were greater and my waist slender.	
FTLN 0424	CHIEF JUSTICE You have misled the youthful prince.	
FTLN 0425	FALSTAFF The young prince hath misled me. I am the	
FTLN 0426	fellow with the great belly, and he my dog.	
FTLN 0427	CHIEF JUSTICE Well, I am loath to gall a new-healed	150
FTLN 0428	wound. Your day's service at Shrewsbury hath a	
FTLN 0429	little gilded over your night's exploit on Gad's Hill.	
FTLN 0430	You may thank th' unquiet time for your quiet	
FTLN 0431	o'erposting that action.	
FTLN 0432	FALSTAFF My lord.	155
FTLN 0433	CHIEF JUSTICE But since all is well, keep it so. Wake not	
FTLN 0434	a sleeping wolf.	
FTLN 0435	FALSTAFF To wake a wolf is as bad as $\langle to \rangle$ smell a fox.	
FTLN 0436	CHIEF JUSTICE What, you are as a candle, the better	
FTLN 0437	part burnt out.	160
FTLN 0438	FALSTAFF A wassail candle, my lord, all tallow. If I did	
FTLN 0439	say of wax, my growth would approve the truth.	
FTLN 0440	CHIEF JUSTICE There is not a white hair in your face but	
FTLN 0441	should have his effect of gravity.	
FTLN 0442	FALSTAFF His effect of gravy, gravy, gravy.	165
FTLN 0443	CHIEF JUSTICE You follow the young prince up and	
FTLN 0444	down like his ill angel.	
FTLN 0445	FALSTAFF Not so, my lord. Your ill angel is light, but I	
FTLN 0446	hope he that looks upon me will take me without	
FTLN 0447	weighing. And yet in some respects I grant I cannot	170

FTLN 0448	go. I cannot tell. Virtue is of so little regard in these	
FTLN 0449	costermongers' times that true valor is turned bearherd;	
FTLN 0450	pregnancy is made a tapster, and (hath) his	
FTLN 0451	quick wit wasted in giving reckonings. All the other	
FTLN 0452	gifts appurtenant to man, as the malice of (this) age	175
FTLN 0453	shapes (them, are) not worth a gooseberry. You that	
FTLN 0454	are old consider not the capacities of us that are	
FTLN 0455	young. You do measure the heat of our livers with	
FTLN 0456	the bitterness of your galls, and we that are in the	
FTLN 0457	vaward of our youth, I must confess, are wags too.	180
FTLN 0458	CHIEF JUSTICE Do you set down your name in the scroll	
FTLN 0459	of youth, that are written down old with all the	
FTLN 0460	characters of age? Have you not a moist eye, a dry	
FTLN 0461	hand, a yellow cheek, a white beard, a decreasing	
FTLN 0462	leg, an increasing belly? Is not your voice broken,	185
FTLN 0463	your wind short, your chin double, your wit single,	
FTLN 0464	and every part about you blasted with antiquity?	
FTLN 0465	And will you yet call yourself young? Fie, fie, fie, Sir	
FTLN 0466	John.	
FTLN 0466 FTLN 0467	John. FALSTAFF My lord, I was born [about three of the clock	190
		190
FTLN 0467	FALSTAFF My lord, I was born [about three of the clock in the afternoon,] with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with	190
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468	FALSTAFF My lord, I was born [about three of the clock in the afternoon,] with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my	190
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468 FTLN 0469	FALSTAFF My lord, I was born [about three of the clock in the afternoon,] with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not. The truth is, I am only old	190
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468 FTLN 0469 FTLN 0470	in the afternoon, with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not. The truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding. And he that will	190 195
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468 FTLN 0469 FTLN 0470 FTLN 0471	in the afternoon, with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not. The truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding. And he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend	
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468 FTLN 0469 FTLN 0470 FTLN 0471 FTLN 0472	in the afternoon, with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not. The truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding. And he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him. For the box of the	
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468 FTLN 0469 FTLN 0470 FTLN 0471 FTLN 0472 FTLN 0473	in the afternoon, with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not. The truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding. And he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him. For the box of the (ear) that the Prince gave you, he gave it like a rude	
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468 FTLN 0469 FTLN 0470 FTLN 0471 FTLN 0472 FTLN 0473 FTLN 0474	in the afternoon, with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not. The truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding. And he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him. For the box of the (ear) that the Prince gave you, he gave it like a rude prince, and you took it like a sensible lord. I have	
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468 FTLN 0469 FTLN 0470 FTLN 0471 FTLN 0472 FTLN 0473 FTLN 0474 FTLN 0475	in the afternoon, with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not. The truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding. And he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him. For the box of the (ear) that the Prince gave you, he gave it like a rude prince, and you took it like a sensible lord. I have checked him for it, and the young lion repents.	
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468 FTLN 0469 FTLN 0470 FTLN 0471 FTLN 0472 FTLN 0473 FTLN 0474 FTLN 0475 FTLN 0476	in the afternoon, with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not. The truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding. And he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him. For the box of the (ear) that the Prince gave you, he gave it like a rude prince, and you took it like a sensible lord. I have checked him for it, and the young lion repents. **Aside.** Marry, not in ashes and sackcloth, but in	195
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468 FTLN 0469 FTLN 0470 FTLN 0471 FTLN 0472 FTLN 0473 FTLN 0474 FTLN 0475 FTLN 0476 FTLN 0477	in the afternoon, with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not. The truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding. And he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him. For the box of the (ear) that the Prince gave you, he gave it like a rude prince, and you took it like a sensible lord. I have checked him for it, and the young lion repents. [Aside.] Marry, not in ashes and sackcloth, but in new silk and old sack.	195
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468 FTLN 0469 FTLN 0470 FTLN 0471 FTLN 0472 FTLN 0473 FTLN 0474 FTLN 0475 FTLN 0476 FTLN 0477 FTLN 0478	in the afternoon, with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not. The truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding. And he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him. For the box of the (ear) that the Prince gave you, he gave it like a rude prince, and you took it like a sensible lord. I have checked him for it, and the young lion repents. [Aside.] Marry, not in ashes and sackcloth, but in new silk and old sack. CHIEF JUSTICE Well, God send the Prince a better	195
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468 FTLN 0469 FTLN 0470 FTLN 0471 FTLN 0472 FTLN 0473 FTLN 0474 FTLN 0475 FTLN 0476 FTLN 0477 FTLN 0477 FTLN 0479 FTLN 0480 FTLN 0481	in the afternoon, with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not. The truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding. And he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him. For the box of the (ear) that the Prince gave you, he gave it like a rude prince, and you took it like a sensible lord. I have checked him for it, and the young lion repents. [Aside.] Marry, not in ashes and sackcloth, but in new silk and old sack. CHIEF JUSTICE Well, God send the Prince a better companion.	195 200
FTLN 0467 FTLN 0468 FTLN 0469 FTLN 0470 FTLN 0471 FTLN 0472 FTLN 0473 FTLN 0474 FTLN 0475 FTLN 0476 FTLN 0477 FTLN 0478 FTLN 0479 FTLN 0480	in the afternoon, with a white head and something a round belly. For my voice, I have lost it with halloing and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not. The truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding. And he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him. For the box of the (ear) that the Prince gave you, he gave it like a rude prince, and you took it like a sensible lord. I have checked him for it, and the young lion repents. [Aside.] Marry, not in ashes and sackcloth, but in new silk and old sack. CHIEF JUSTICE Well, God send the Prince a better	195

FTLN 0484	CHIEF JUSTICE Well, the King hath severed you (and	
FTLN 0485	Prince Harry.) I hear you are going with Lord John	
FTLN 0486	of Lancaster against the Archbishop and the Earl of	
FTLN 0487	Northumberland.	210
FTLN 0488	FALSTAFF Yea, I thank your pretty sweet wit for it. But	
FTLN 0489	look you pray, all you that kiss my Lady Peace at	
FTLN 0490	home, that our armies join not in a hot day, for, by	
FTLN 0491	the Lord, I take but two shirts out with me, and I	
FTLN 0492	mean not to sweat extraordinarily. If it be a hot day	215
FTLN 0493	and I brandish anything but a bottle, I would I	
FTLN 0494	might never spit white again. There is not a dangerous	
FTLN 0495	action can peep out his head but I am thrust	
FTLN 0496	upon it. Well, I cannot last ever. [But it was always	
FTLN 0497	yet the trick of our English nation, if they have a	220
FTLN 0498	good thing, to make it too common. If you will	
FTLN 0499	needs say I am an old man, you should give me rest.	
FTLN 0500	I would to God my name were not so terrible to the	
FTLN 0501	enemy as it is. I were better to be eaten to death	
FTLN 0502	with a rust than to be scoured to nothing with	225
FTLN 0503	perpetual motion.]	
FTLN 0504	CHIEF JUSTICE Well, be honest, be honest, and God	
FTLN 0505	bless your expedition.	
FTLN 0506	FALSTAFF Will your Lordship lend me a thousand	
FTLN 0507	pound to furnish me forth?	230
FTLN 0508	CHIEF JUSTICE Not a penny, not a penny. You are too	
FTLN 0509	impatient to bear crosses. Fare you well. Commend	
FTLN 0510	me to my cousin Westmoreland.	
	Lord Chief Justice and his Servant exit.	
FTLN 0511	FALSTAFF If I do, fillip me with a three-man beetle. A	
FTLN 0512	man can no more separate age and covetousness	235
FTLN 0513	than he can part young limbs and lechery; but the	
FTLN 0514	gout galls the one, and the pox pinches the other,	
FTLN 0515	and so both the degrees prevent my curses.—Boy!	
FTLN 0516	PAGE Sir.	
FTLN 0517	FALSTAFF What money is in my purse?	240
FTLN 0518	PAGE Seven groats and two pence.	

FTLN 0519	FALSTAFF I can get no remedy against this consumption	
FTLN 0520	of the purse. Borrowing only lingers and lingers	
FTLN 0521	it out, but the disease is incurable. <i>Giving</i>	
FTLN 0522	papers to the Page. Go bear this letter to my Lord	245
FTLN 0523	of Lancaster, this to the Prince, this to the Earl	
FTLN 0524	of Westmoreland, and this to old Mistress Ursula,	
FTLN 0525	whom I have weekly sworn to marry since I perceived	
FTLN 0526	the first white hair of my chin. About it. You	
FTLN 0527	know where to find me. [Page exits.] A pox of this	250
FTLN 0528	gout! Or a gout of this pox, for the one or the other	
FTLN 0529	plays the rogue with my great toe. 'Tis no matter if I	
FTLN 0530	do halt. I have the wars for my color, and my	
FTLN 0531	pension shall seem the more reasonable. A good wit	
FTLN 0532	will make use of anything. I will turn diseases to	255
FTLN 0533	commodity.	
	THe exits.	

⟨Scene 「3¬⟩

Enter th' Archbishop of York, Thomas Mowbray (Earl Marshal), the Lord Hastings, and \(Lord \) Bardolph.

ARCHBISHOP

FTLN 0534	Thus have you heard our cause and known our	
FTLN 0535	means,	
FTLN 0536	And, my most noble friends, I pray you all	
FTLN 0537	Speak plainly your opinions of our hopes.	
FTLN 0538	And first, Lord Marshal, what say you to it?	5
	MOWBRAY	
FTLN 0539	I well allow the occasion of our arms,	
FTLN 0540	But gladly would be better satisfied	
FTLN 0541	How in our means we should advance ourselves	
FTLN 0542	To look with forehead bold and big enough	
FTLN 0543	Upon the power and puissance of the King.	10
	HASTINGS	
FTLN 0544	Our present musters grow upon the file	

FTLN 0545	To five-and-twenty thousand men of choice,	
FTLN 0546	And our supplies live largely in the hope	
FTLN 0547	Of great Northumberland, whose bosom burns	
FTLN 0548	With an incensed fire of injuries.	15
	LORD BARDOLPH	10
FTLN 0549	The question, then, Lord Hastings, standeth thus:	
FTLN 0550	Whether our present five-and-twenty thousand	
FTLN 0551	May hold up head without Northumberland.	
	HASTINGS	
FTLN 0552	With him we may.	
FTLN 0553	LORD BARDOLPH Yea, marry, there's the point.	20
FTLN 0554	But if without him we be thought too feeble,	
FTLN 0555	My judgment is we should not step too far	
FTLN 0556	Till we had his assistance by the hand.	
FTLN 0557	For in a theme so bloody-faced as this,	
FTLN 0558	Conjecture, expectation, and surmise	25
FTLN 0559	Of aids incertain should not be admitted.	
	ARCHBISHOP	
FTLN 0560	'Tis very true, Lord Bardolph, for indeed	
FTLN 0561	It was young Hotspur's cause at Shrewsbury.	
	LORD BARDOLPH	
FTLN 0562	It was, my lord; who lined himself with hope,	
FTLN 0563	Eating the air and promise of supply,	30
FTLN 0564	Flatt'ring himself in project of a power	
FTLN 0565	Much smaller than the smallest of his thoughts,	
FTLN 0566	And so, with great imagination	
FTLN 0567	Proper to madmen, led his powers to death	
FTLN 0568	And, winking, leapt into destruction.	35
	HASTINGS	
FTLN 0569	But, by your leave, it never yet did hurt	
FTLN 0570	To lay down likelihoods and forms of hope.	
	LORD BARDOLPH	
FTLN 0571	Yes, if this present quality of war —	
FTLN 0572	Indeed the instant action, a cause on foot—	
FTLN 0573	Lives so in hope, as in an early spring	40
FTLN 0574	We see th' appearing buds, which to prove fruit	

FTLN 0575	Hope gives not so much warrant as despair	
FTLN 0576	That frosts will bite them. When we mean to build,	
FTLN 0577	We first survey the plot, then draw the model,	
FTLN 0578	And when we see the figure of the house,	45
FTLN 0579	Then must we rate the cost of the erection,	
FTLN 0580	Which if we find outweighs ability,	
FTLN 0581	What do we then but draw anew the model	
FTLN 0582	In fewer offices, or at least desist	
FTLN 0583	To build at all? Much more in this great work,	50
FTLN 0584	Which is almost to pluck a kingdom down	
FTLN 0585	And set another up, should we survey	
FTLN 0586	The plot of situation and the model,	
FTLN 0587	Consent upon a sure foundation,	
FTLN 0588	Question surveyors, know our own estate,	55
FTLN 0589	How able such a work to undergo,	
FTLN 0590	To weigh against his opposite. Or else	
FTLN 0591	We fortify in paper and in figures,	
FTLN 0592	Using the names of men instead of men,	
FTLN 0593	Like one that draws the model of an house	60
FTLN 0594	Beyond his power to build it, who, half through,	
FTLN 0595	Gives o'er and leaves his part-created cost	
FTLN 0596	A naked subject to the weeping clouds	
FTLN 0597	And waste for churlish winter's tyranny.	
	HASTINGS	
FTLN 0598	Grant that our hopes, yet likely of fair birth,	65
FTLN 0599	Should be stillborn and that we now possessed	
FTLN 0600	The utmost man of expectation,	
FTLN 0601	I think we are $\langle a \rangle$ body strong enough,	
FTLN 0602	Even as we are, to equal with the King.	
	LORD BARDOLPH	
FTLN 0603	What, is the King but five-and-twenty thousand?	70
	HASTINGS	
FTLN 0604	To us no more, nay, not so much, Lord Bardolph,	
FTLN 0605	For his divisions, as the times do brawl,	
FTLN 0606	(Are) in three heads: one power against the French,	
FTLN 0607	And one against Glendower; perforce a third	

FTLN 0608	Must take up us. So is the unfirm king	75
FTLN 0609	In three divided, and his coffers sound	
FTLN 0610	With hollow poverty and emptiness.	
	ARCHBISHOP	
FTLN 0611	That he should draw his several strengths together	
FTLN 0612	And come against us in full puissance	
FTLN 0613	Need not to be dreaded.	80
FTLN 0614	HASTINGS If he should do so,	
FTLN 0615	(He leaves his back unarmed, the French and Welsh)	
FTLN 0616	Baying him at the heels. Never fear that.	
	LORD BARDOLPH	
FTLN 0617	Who is it like should lead his forces hither?	
	HASTINGS	
FTLN 0618	The Duke of Lancaster and Westmoreland;	85
FTLN 0619	Against the Welsh, himself and Harry Monmouth;	
FTLN 0620	But who is substituted against the French	
FTLN 0621	I have no certain notice.	
FTLN 0622	(ARCHBISHOP Let us on,	
FTLN 0623	And publish the occasion of our arms.	90
FTLN 0624	The commonwealth is sick of their own choice.	
FTLN 0625	Their over-greedy love hath surfeited.	
FTLN 0626	An habitation giddy and unsure	
FTLN 0627	Hath he that buildeth on the vulgar heart.	
FTLN 0628	O thou fond many, with what loud applause	95
FTLN 0629	Didst thou beat heaven with blessing Bolingbroke	
FTLN 0630	Before he was what thou wouldst have him be.	
FTLN 0631	And being now trimmed in thine own desires,	
FTLN 0632	Thou, beastly feeder, art so full of him	
FTLN 0633	That thou provok'st thyself to cast him up.	100
FTLN 0634	So, so, thou common dog, didst thou disgorge	
FTLN 0635	Thy glutton bosom of the royal Richard,	
FTLN 0636	And now thou wouldst eat thy dead vomit up	
FTLN 0637	And howl'st to find it. What trust is in these	
FTLN 0638	times?	105
FTLN 0639	They that, when Richard lived, would have him die	
FTLN 0640	Are now become enamored on his grave.	

FTLN 0641	Thou, that threw'st dust upon his goodly head	
FTLN 0642	When through proud London he came sighing on	
FTLN 0643	After th' admirèd heels of Bolingbroke,	110
FTLN 0644	Criest now "O earth, yield us that king again,	
FTLN 0645	And take thou this!" O thoughts of men accursed!	
FTLN 0646	Past and to come seems best; things present,	
FTLN 0647	worst.>	
	(MOWBRAY)	
FTLN 0648	Shall we go draw our numbers and set on?	115
	HASTINGS	
FTLN 0649	We are time's subjects, and time bids begone.	
	They exit.	

⟨Scene 1⟩

Enter Hostess Quickly of the tavern (with two Officers, Fang and Snare,) who lags behind.

FTLN 0650	HOSTESS Master Fang, have you entered the action?	
FTLN 0651	FANG It is entered.	
FTLN 0652	HOSTESS Where's your yeoman? Is 't a lusty yeoman?	
FTLN 0653	Will he stand to 't?	
FTLN 0654	FANG, [calling] Sirrah! Where's Snare?	5
FTLN 0655	HOSTESS O Lord, ay, good Master Snare.	
FTLN 0656	SNARE, <i>catching up to them</i> Here, here.	
FTLN 0657	FANG Snare, we must arrest Sir John Falstaff.	
FTLN 0658	HOSTESS Yea, good Master Snare, I have entered him	
FTLN 0659	and all.	10
FTLN 0660	SNARE It may chance cost some of us our lives, for he	
FTLN 0661	will stab.	
FTLN 0662	HOSTESS Alas the day, take heed of him. He stabbed me	
FTLN 0663	in mine own house, (and that) most beastly, in good	
FTLN 0664	faith. He cares not what mischief he does. If his	15
FTLN 0665	weapon be out, he will foin like any devil. He will	
FTLN 0666	spare neither man, woman, nor child.	
FTLN 0667	FANG If I can close with him, I care not for his thrust.	
FTLN 0668	HOSTESS No, nor I neither. I'll be at your elbow.	
FTLN 0669	FANG An I but fist him once, an he come but within my	20
FTLN 0670	view—	
FTLN 0671	HOSTESS I am undone by his going. I warrant you, he's	

FTLN 0672	an infinitive thing upon my score. Good Master	
FTLN 0673	Fang, hold him sure. Good Master Snare, let him	
FTLN 0674	not 'scape. He comes (continuantly) to Pie Corner,	25
FTLN 0675	saving your manhoods, to buy a saddle, and he is	
FTLN 0676	indited to dinner to the Lubber's Head in Lumbert	
FTLN 0677	Street, to Master Smooth's the silkman. I pray you,	
FTLN 0678	since my exion is entered, and my case so openly	
FTLN 0679	known to the world, let him be brought in to his	30
FTLN 0680	answer. A hundred mark is a long one for a poor	
FTLN 0681	lone woman to bear, and I have borne, and borne,	
FTLN 0682	and borne, and have been fubbed off, and fubbed	
FTLN 0683	off, and fubbed off from this day to that day, that it is	
FTLN 0684	a shame to be thought on. There is no honesty in	35
FTLN 0685	such dealing, unless a woman should be made an	
FTLN 0686	ass and a beast to bear every knave's wrong. Yonder	
FTLN 0687	he comes, and that arrant malmsey-nose knave,	
FTLN 0688	Bardolph, with him. Do your offices, do your offices,	
FTLN 0689	Master Fang and Master Snare, do me, do me,	40
FTLN 0690	do me your offices.	
	Enter Sir John (Falstaff) and Bardolph, and the [Page.]	
FTLN 0691	FALSTAFF How now, whose mare's dead? What's the	
FTLN 0692	matter?	
FTLN 0693	FANG (Sir John,) I arrest you at the suit of Mistress	
FTLN 0694	Quickly.	45
FTLN 0695	FALSTAFF Away, varlets!—Draw, Bardolph. Cut me off	
FTLN 0696	the villain's head. Throw the quean in the	
FTLN 0697	channel. <i>They draw.</i>	
FTLN 0698	HOSTESS Throw me in the channel? I'll throw thee in	
FTLN 0699	the channel. Wilt thou, wilt thou, thou bastardly	50
FTLN 0700	rogue?—Murder, murder!—Ah, thou honeysuckle	
FTLN 0701	villain, wilt thou kill God's officers and the King's?	
FTLN 0702	Ah, thou honeyseed rogue, thou art a honeyseed, a	
FTLN 0703	man-queller, and a woman-queller.	
FTLN 0704	FALSTAFF Keep them off, Bardolph.	55

FTLN 0705 FTLN 0706 FTLN 0707 FTLN 0708 FTLN 0709 FTLN 0710	OFFICERS A rescue, a rescue! HOSTESS Good people, bring a rescue or two.—Thou wot, wot thou? Thou wot, wot ta? Do, do, thou rogue. Do, thou hempseed. PAGE Away, you scullion, you rampallian, you fustilarian! I'll tickle your catastrophe.	60
	Enter Lord Chief Justice and his Men.	
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 0711	What is the matter? Keep the peace here, ho!	
FTLN 0712	HOSTESS Good my lord, be good to me. I beseech you	
FTLN 0713	stand to me.	
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 0714	How now, Sir John? What, are you brawling here?	65
FTLN 0715	Doth this become your place, your time, and	
FTLN 0716	business?	
FTLN 0717	You should have been well on your way to York.—	
FTLN 0718	Stand from him, fellow. Wherefore hang'st thou	
FTLN 0719	upon him?	70
FTLN 0720	HOSTESS O my most worshipful lord, an 't please your	
FTLN 0721	Grace, I am a poor widow of Eastcheap, and he is	
FTLN 0722	arrested at my suit.	
FTLN 0723	CHIEF JUSTICE For what sum?	
FTLN 0724	HOSTESS It is more than for some, my lord; it is for all I	75
FTLN 0725	have. He hath eaten me out of house and home. He	
FTLN 0726	hath put all my substance into that fat belly of his.	
FTLN 0727	To Falstaff. But I will have some of it out again, or I	
FTLN 0728	will ride thee o' nights like the mare.	
FTLN 0729	FALSTAFF I think I am as like to ride the mare if I have	80
FTLN 0730	any vantage of ground to get up.	
FTLN 0731	CHIEF JUSTICE How comes this, Sir John? (Fie,) what	
FTLN 0732	man of good temper would endure this tempest of	
FTLN 0733	exclamation? Are you not ashamed to enforce a	
FTLN 0734	poor widow to so rough a course to come by her	85
FTLN 0735	own?	

FTLN 0736	FALSTAFF What is the gross sum that I owe thee?	
FTLN 0737	HOSTESS Marry, if thou wert an honest man, thyself	
FTLN 0738	and the money too. Thou didst swear to me upon a	
FTLN 0739	parcel-gilt goblet, sitting in my Dolphin chamber at	90
FTLN 0740	the round table by a sea-coal fire, upon Wednesday	
FTLN 0741	in Wheeson week, when the Prince broke thy head	
FTLN 0742	for liking his father to a singing-man of Windsor,	
FTLN 0743	thou didst swear to me then, as I was washing thy	
FTLN 0744	wound, to marry me and make me my lady thy wife.	95
FTLN 0745	Canst thou deny it? Did not Goodwife Keech, the	
FTLN 0746	butcher's wife, come in then and call me Gossip	
FTLN 0747	Quickly, coming in to borrow a mess of vinegar,	
FTLN 0748	telling us she had a good dish of prawns, whereby	
FTLN 0749	thou didst desire to eat some, whereby I told thee	100
FTLN 0750	they were ill for a green wound? And didst thou not,	
FTLN 0751	when she was gone downstairs, desire me to be no	
FTLN 0752	more so familiarity with such poor people, saying	
FTLN 0753	that ere long they should call me madam? And didst	
FTLN 0754	thou not kiss me and bid me fetch thee thirty	105
FTLN 0755	shillings? I put thee now to thy book-oath. Deny it if	
FTLN 0756	thou canst.	
FTLN 0757	FALSTAFF My lord, this is a poor mad soul, and she says	
FTLN 0758	up and down the town that her eldest son is like	
FTLN 0759	you. She hath been in good case, and the truth is,	110
FTLN 0760	poverty hath distracted her. But, for these foolish	
FTLN 0761	officers, I beseech you I may have redress against	
FTLN 0762	them.	
FTLN 0763	CHIEF JUSTICE Sir John, Sir John, I am well acquainted	
FTLN 0764	with your manner of wrenching the true cause the	115
FTLN 0765	false way. It is not a confident brow, nor the throng	
FTLN 0766	of words that come with such more than impudent	
FTLN 0767	sauciness from you, can thrust me from a level	
FTLN 0768	consideration. You have, as it appears to me, practiced	
FTLN 0769	upon the easy-yielding spirit of this woman,	120
FTLN 0770	[and made her serve your uses both in purse and in	
FTLN 0771	person.]	
	L - See	

FTLN 0774 owe her, and unpay the villainy you have done with her. The one you may do with sterling money, and the other with current repentance. FTLN 0776 FALSTAFF My lord, I will not undergo this sneap without reply. You call honorable boldness "impudent sauciness." If a man will make curtsy and say 130 nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FTLN 0782 being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FTLN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. FHE speaks aside to the Hostess. FHE speaks aside to the Hostess. FHEN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. FHE gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, To the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FILN 0774 owe her, and unpay the villainy you have done with her. The one you may do with sterling money, and the other with current repentance. FILN 0776 falsTAFF My lord, I will not undergo this sneap without reply. You call honorable boldness "impudent sauciness." If a man will make curtsy and say rtln 0780 nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. FHe speaks aside to the Hostess. FHEN 0787 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FILN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. FHEN 0790 FALSTAFF, for the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FILN 0791 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FILN 0794 of it. 145	FTLN 0772	HOSTESS Yea, in truth, my lord.	
her. The one you may do with sterling money, and the other with current repentance. FTLN 0776 FALSTAFF My lord, I will not undergo this sneap without reply. You call honorable boldness "impudent sauciness." If a man will make curtsy and say 130 nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FTLN 0781 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; 135 but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0785 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. FHe speaks aside to the Hostess. FHEN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. FHE gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, To the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FILN 0775 her. The one you may do with sterling money, and the other with current repentance. FILN 0776 FALSTAFF My lord, I will not undergo this sneap without reply. You call honorable boldness "impudent FILN 0779 sauciness." If a man will make curtsy and say 130 nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FILN 0782 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FILN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, What news?** GOWER FILN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales **FILN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells.** **FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, **To the Hostess** As I am a gentleman!* FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FILN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FILN 0794 of it. 145 **HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FILN 0799 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the FILN 0799 FILN 0799 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is		CHIEF JUSTICE Pray thee, peace.—Pay her the debt you	
the other with current repentance. FTLN 0777 FALSTAFF My lord, I will not undergo this sneap without reply. You call honorable boldness "impudent sauciness." If a man will make curtsy and say 130 nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FTLN 0781 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; 135 but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FILN 0785 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. FHe speaks aside to the Hostess. FHEN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. FHE gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, To the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	the other with current repentance. FILN 0777 FALSTAFF My lord, I will not undergo this sneap without reply. You call honorable boldness "impudent FILN 0778 sauciness." If a man will make curtsy and say 130 FILN 0780 nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble FILN 0781 duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FILN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FILN 0785 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **FILN 0786 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \)\ FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FILN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **FILN 0790 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before.** FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, **To the Hostess** As I am a gentleman! FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FILN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FILN 0794 of it. FILN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be FILN 0796 fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FILN 0797 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FILN 0799 fALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the FILN 0799 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the FILN 0799 Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is			125
FTLN 0777 FALSTAFF My lord, I will not undergo this sneap without reply. You call honorable boldness "impudent FTLN 0779 sauciness." If a man will make curtsy and say 130 FTLN 0780 nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble FTLN 0781 duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to FTLN 0782 you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, FTLN 0783 being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FTLN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; FTLN 0785 but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and FTLN 0786 satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **FHE Speaks aside to the Hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \) **FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER **FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** **FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, \(\text{ to the Hostess} \) As I am a gentleman! **FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. **FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words **of it. 145 **FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be**	FTLN 0777 FALSTAFF My lord, I will not undergo this sneap without FTLN 0778 reply. You call honorable boldness "impudent FTLN 0779 sauciness." If a man will make curtsy and say FTLN 0780 nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble FTLN 0781 duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to FTLN 0782 you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, FTLN 0783 being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FTLN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; FTLN 0785 but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and FTLN 0786 satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. FHE speaks aside to the Hostess. FHE speaks aside to the Hostess. FHEN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. FHE gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be FTLN 0796 fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my FTLN 0797 dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for FTLN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is			
FTLN 0778 reply. You call honorable boldness "impudent FTLN 0779 sauciness." If a man will make curtsy and say 130 FTLN 0780 nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble FTLN 0781 duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to FTLN 0782 you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, FTLN 0783 being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FTLN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; FTLN 0785 but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and FTLN 0786 satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **FHER OFFICE** FALSTAFF** FALSTAFF** For the Hostess* Falstafe, you said so before. FTLN 0790 FALSTAFF** Falstafe, you said so before. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF** Falstafe, you said so before. FTLN 0792 FALSTAFF** As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS** By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FTLN 0778 reply. You call honorable boldness "impudent sauciness." If a man will make curtsy and say 130 nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble fTLN 0781 duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FTLN 0782 but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0785 but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0786 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **FILN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \)\ FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **FILN 0790 FALSTAFF, \(\textit{ to the Hostess} \rightarrow As I am a gentleman! \) FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0792 foit. FTLN 0794 of it. FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be FTLN 0796 fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my FTLN 0797 dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for FTLN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is		<u> </u>	
FILN 0779 sauciness." If a man will make curtsy and say nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble fILN 0781 duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FILN 0782 but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FILN 0785 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **The speaks aside to the Hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \) FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FILN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FILN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **The gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, \(To \text{ the Hostess} \) As I am a gentleman! FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FILN 0794 of it. FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FILN 0794 of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FILN 0779 sauciness." If a man will make curtsy and say nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble fuln 0781 duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FILN 0783 being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FILN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; fuln 0785 but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. FHe speaks aside to the Hostess. FHEN 0787 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FILN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FILN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. FHE gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FILN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for fILN 0799 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for fILN 0799 Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is			
nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble ftln 0781 duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to ftln 0782 you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. ftln 0783 being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. ftln 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. ftln 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. Film 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, What news? GOWER ftln 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales ftln 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. Film 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! ftln 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. ftln 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words of it. ftln 0794 of it. ftln 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	nothing, he is virtuous. No, my lord, my humble duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FILN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FILN 0786 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **The speaks aside to the Hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \) **Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \) **FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? **GOWER** **FILN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales **FILN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **In the gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FILN 0790 FALSTAFF, \(\to \the Hostess \) As I am a gentleman! FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, \(\to \the Hostess \) As I am a gentleman! FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FILN 0794 of it. FILN 0795 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FILN 0796 for it. FILN 0797 dining chambers. FILN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for FILN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0778	÷ *	
duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FILN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, What news?** GOWER FILN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FILN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, **fo the Hostess** As I am a gentleman!* FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FILN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FILN 0794 of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	duty remembered, I will not be your suitor. I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. FHE speaks aside to the Hostess. Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \) FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FILN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FILN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. FHE gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, \(\text{ to the Hostess} \) As I am a gentleman! FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FILN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words of it. FILN 0794 of it. FILN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FILN 0799 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0779		130
you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FTLN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0786 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **FILN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \) FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, \(\text{to the Hostess} \) As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0794 of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FILN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FILN 0785 FILN 0786 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. FHe speaks aside to the Hostess. FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FILN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FILN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. FHe gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FILN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FILN 0794 of it. FILN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FILN 0797 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0780		
being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FTLN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and FTLN 0786 satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **The speaks aside to the Hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \) FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **Ite gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FTLN 0790 FALSTAFF, \(\text{to the Hostess} \) As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, \(\text{to the Hostess} \) As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	being upon hasty employment in the King's affairs. FTLN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0786 Satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower.** **FILN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **FILN 0790 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, **To the Hostess** As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0781		
FTLN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0786 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **FILN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(\text{Master Gower.} \) FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **IHe gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, \(\text{to the Hostess} \) As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FTLN 0784 CHIEF JUSTICE You speak as having power to do wrong; FTLN 0785 but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. FHe speaks aside to the Hostess. FHEN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. FHEN 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0782		
but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0786 satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **The speaks aside to the Hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(\text{Master Gower.} \) FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, \(\text{to the Hostess} \) As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0786 satisfy the poor woman. FTLN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **The speaks aside to the Hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \) **FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **The gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, \(\text{ to the Hostess} \) As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for fTLN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0783		
FILN 0786 satisfy the poor woman. FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **The speaks aside to the Hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \) FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FILN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FILN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **The gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, \(\text{ to the Hostess} \) As I am a gentleman! FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FILN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FILN 0786 Satisfy the poor woman. FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **The speaks aside to the Hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \) \ **Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \) \ **FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? **GOWER** **FILN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales 140 **FILN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. ***Ind 140 Hostess Hast I am a gentleman! Hostess Faith, you said so before. **FILN 0791 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. **FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. **FILN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words **FILN 0794 Of it. 145 **FILN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. **FILN 0796 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0784		135
FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **The speaks aside to the Hostess.** **Enter a Messenger, \(\text{Master Gower.} \) FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **The gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, \(\text{to the Hostess} \) As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FILN 0787 FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess. **FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales **FILN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, **Ito the Hostess** As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. **FILN 0795 HOSTESS** By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0785	but answer in th' effect of your reputation, and	
FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FILN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FILN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FILN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FILN 0794 of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FILN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales 140 FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. ——————————————————————————————————	FTLN 0786	satisfy the poor woman.	
Enter a Messenger, \(\text{Master Gower.} \) FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales 140 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, \(\text{to the Hostess} \) As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	Enter a Messenger, \(Master Gower. \) FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales 140 FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. ### Gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, ** to the Hostess** As I am a gentleman! ### HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words ### FTLN 0794 Of it. 145 ### HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be ### fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my ### dining chambers. ### FTLN 0797 Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for ### TILN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the ### Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0787	FALSTAFF Come hither, hostess.	
FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales 140 FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales 140 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be FTLN 0796 fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my GINN 0797 dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for FTLN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is		THe speaks aside to the Hostess.	
FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales 140 FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FTLN 0788 CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales 140 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be FTLN 0796 fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my GINN 0797 dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for FTLN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is			
GOWER FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales 140 FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **THE gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, **to the Hostess** As I am a gentleman!* FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FTLN 0789 The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. ### Gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, ** to the Hostess** As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be ###################################		Enter a Messenger (Master Gower)	
The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FILN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FILN 0794 of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FILN 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FILN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FILN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FILN 0794 of it. 145 FILN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be FILN 0796 fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my FILN 0797 dining chambers. FILN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for FILN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the FILN 0800 Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is		Enter a Messenger, (Master Gower.)	
Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, **to the Hostess** As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FTLN 0790 Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **THE gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, **to the Hostess** As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be FTLN 0796 fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my FTLN 0797 dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for FTLN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the FTLN 0799 Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0788		
FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, *to the Hostess* As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be FTLN 0796 fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my FTLN 0797 dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for FTLN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the FTLN 0800 Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0788	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news?	
FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, *\[\text{to the Hostess} \] As I am a gentleman! FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FTLN 0791 FALSTAFF, **to the Hostess** As I am a gentleman!* FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be FTLN 0796 fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my FTLN 0797 dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for FTLN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the FTLN 0800 Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is		CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales	140
FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FTLN 0792 HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be FTLN 0796 fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for FTLN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0789	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales	140
FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FTLN 0793 FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be FTLN 0796 fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my Gining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for FTLN 0799 thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the FTLN 0800 Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0789	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells.	140
FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FTLN 0794 of it. 145 FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0789 FTLN 0790	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. "He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read."	140
FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	FTLN 0795 HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0789 FTLN 0790 FTLN 0791	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. The gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FALSTAFF, To the Hostess As I am a gentleman!	140
· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the FTLN 0800 Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0789 FTLN 0790 FTLN 0791 FTLN 0792	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **The gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FALSTAFF, **To the Hostess** As I am a gentleman! HOSTESS Faith, you said so before.	140
· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the FTLN 0800 Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0789 FTLN 0790 FTLN 0791 FTLN 0792 FTLN 0793	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FALSTAFF, **to the Hostess** As I am a gentleman! HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words	
rilly 0/30 fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my	FTLN 0797 dining chambers. FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0789 FTLN 0790 FTLN 0791 FTLN 0792 FTLN 0793 FTLN 0794	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **The gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FALSTAFF, **To the Hostess** As I am a gentleman! HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words of it.	
	FTLN 0798 FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0789 FTLN 0790 FTLN 0791 FTLN 0792 FTLN 0793 FTLN 0794 FTLN 0795	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be	
	thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0789 FTLN 0790 FTLN 0791 FTLN 0792 FTLN 0793 FTLN 0794 FTLN 0795 FTLN 0796	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **The gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FALSTAFF, **To the Hostess** As I am a gentleman! HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my	
	Prodigal or the German hunting in waterwork is	FTLN 0789 FTLN 0790 FTLN 0791 FTLN 0792 FTLN 0793 FTLN 0794 FTLN 0795 FTLN 0796 FTLN 0797	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers.	
		FTLN 0789 FTLN 0790 FTLN 0791 FTLN 0792 FTLN 0793 FTLN 0794 FTLN 0795 FTLN 0796 FTLN 0797 FTLN 0798	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. **THE gives the Chief Justice a paper to read.** FALSTAFF, **To the Hostess** As I am a gentleman! HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for	145
FILM USUU FIGUIGAI OI HIE GEIHIAH HUHUNG IN WALEIWOIK IS		FTLN 0789 FTLN 0790 FTLN 0791 FTLN 0792 FTLN 0793 FTLN 0794 FTLN 0795 FTLN 0796 FTLN 0797 FTLN 0797 FTLN 0798 FTLN 0799	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the	145
richi value riodigai of the German nunting in waterwork is		FTLN 0789 FTLN 0790 FTLN 0791 FTLN 0792 FTLN 0793 FTLN 0794 FTLN 0795 FTLN 0796 FTLN 0797 FTLN 0797 FTLN 0798 FTLN 0799	CHIEF JUSTICE Now, Master Gower, what news? GOWER The King, my lord, and Harry Prince of Wales Are near at hand. The rest the paper tells. He gives the Chief Justice a paper to read. FALSTAFF, to the Hostess As I am a gentleman! HOSTESS Faith, you said so before. FALSTAFF As I am a gentleman. Come. No more words of it. HOSTESS By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate and the tapestry of my dining chambers. FALSTAFF Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking. And for thy walls, a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the	145

FTLN 0802	fly-bitten (tapestries.) Let it be ten pound, if thou	
FTLN 0803	canst. Come, an 'twere not for thy humors, there's	
FTLN 0804	not a better wench in England. Go wash thy face,	155
FTLN 0805	and draw the action. Come, thou must not be in this	
FTLN 0806	humor with me. Dost not know me? Come, come. I	
FTLN 0807	know thou wast set on to this.	
FTLN 0808	HOSTESS Pray thee, Sir John, let it be but twenty	
FTLN 0809	nobles. I' faith, I am loath to pawn my plate, so God	160
FTLN 0810	save me, la.	
FTLN 0811	FALSTAFF Let it alone. I'll make other shift. You'll be a	
FTLN 0812	fool still.	
FTLN 0813	HOSTESS Well, you shall have it, though I pawn my	
FTLN 0814	gown. I hope you'll come to supper. You'll pay	165
FTLN 0815	me all together?	
FTLN 0816	FALSTAFF Will I live? [Aside to Bardolph.] Go with her,	
FTLN 0817	with her. Hook on, hook on.	
FTLN 0818	HOSTESS Will you have Doll Tearsheet meet you at	
FTLN 0819	supper?	170
FTLN 0820	FALSTAFF No more words. Let's have her.	
	Hostess, ^r Fang, Snare, Bardolph, Page, and others [†] exit.	
FTLN 0821	CHIEF JUSTICE, <i>to Gower</i> I have heard better news.	
FTLN 0822	FALSTAFF, <i>to Chief Justice</i> What's the news, my (good)	
FTLN 0823	lord?	
FTLN 0824	CHIEF JUSTICE, <i>to Gower</i> Where lay the King	175
FTLN 0825	tonight?	
FTLN 0826	GOWER At (Basingstoke,) my lord.	
FTLN 0827	FALSTAFF, to Chief Justice I hope, my lord, all's	
FTLN 0828	well. What is the news, my lord?	
FTLN 0829	CHIEF JUSTICE, <i>to Gower</i> Come all his forces back?	180
	GOWER	
FTLN 0830	No. Fifteen hundred foot, five hundred horse	
FTLN 0831	Are marched up to my Lord of Lancaster	
FTLN 0832	Against Northumberland and the Archbishop.	

	FALSTAFF, to Chief Justice	
FTLN 0833	Comes the King back from Wales, my noble lord?	
	CHIEF JUSTICE, \[\tau \text{Gower} \]	
FTLN 0834	You shall have letters of me presently.	185
FTLN 0835	Come. Go along with me, good Master Gower.	
FTLN 0836	FALSTAFF My lord!	
FTLN 0837	CHIEF JUSTICE What's the matter?	
FTLN 0838	FALSTAFF Master Gower, shall I entreat you with me to	
FTLN 0839	dinner?	190
FTLN 0840	GOWER I must wait upon my good lord here. I thank	
FTLN 0841	you, good Sir John.	
FTLN 0842	CHIEF JUSTICE Sir John, you loiter here too long, being	
FTLN 0843	you are to take soldiers up in counties as you go.	
FTLN 0844	FALSTAFF Will you sup with me, Master Gower?	195
FTLN 0845	CHIEF JUSTICE What foolish master taught you these	
FTLN 0846	manners, Sir John?	
FTLN 0847	FALSTAFF Master Gower, if they become me not, he was	
FTLN 0848	a fool that taught them me.—This is the right	
FTLN 0849	fencing grace, my lord: tap for tap, and so part fair.	200
FTLN 0850	CHIEF JUSTICE Now the Lord lighten thee. Thou art a	
FTLN 0851	great fool.	
	$\langle They \ \lceil separate \ and \ \rceil \ exit. \rangle$	

(Scene 2) Enter the Prince [and] Poins.

FTLN 0852	PRINCE Before God, I am exceeding weary.	
FTLN 0853	POINS Is 't come to that? I had thought weariness durst	
FTLN 0854	not have attached one of so high blood.	
FTLN 0855	PRINCE Faith, it does me, though it discolors the complexion	
FTLN 0856	of my greatness to acknowledge it. Doth it	5
FTLN 0857	not show vilely in me to desire small beer?	
FTLN 0858	POINS Why, a prince should not be so loosely studied	
FTLN 0859	as to remember so weak a composition.	

FTLN 0860	PRINCE Belike then my appetite was not princely got,	
FTLN 0861	for, by my troth, I do now remember the poor	10
FTLN 0862	creature small beer. But indeed these humble considerations	
FTLN 0863	make me out of love with my greatness.	
FTLN 0864	What a disgrace is it to me to remember thy name,	
FTLN 0865	or to know thy face tomorrow, or to take note how	
FTLN 0866	many pair of silk stockings thou hast—with these,	15
FTLN 0867	and those that were thy peach-colored (ones)—or to	
FTLN 0868	bear the inventory of thy shirts, as, one for superfluity	
FTLN 0869	and another for use. But that the tennis-court	
FTLN 0870	keeper knows better than I, for it is a low ebb of	
FTLN 0871	linen with thee when thou keepest not racket there,	20
FTLN 0872	as thou hast not done a great while, because the rest	
FTLN 0873	of the low countries have (made a shift to) eat up thy	
FTLN 0874	holland; [and God knows whether those that bawl	
FTLN 0875	out the ruins of thy linen shall inherit His kingdom;	
FTLN 0876	but the midwives say the children are not in the	25
FTLN 0877	fault, whereupon the world increases and kindreds	
FTLN 0878	are mightily strengthened.]	
FTLN 0879	POINS How ill it follows, after you have labored so	
FTLN 0880	hard, you should talk so idly! Tell me, how many	
FTLN 0881	good young princes would do so, their fathers being	30
FTLN 0882	so sick as yours at this time is?	
FTLN 0883	PRINCE Shall I tell thee one thing, Poins?	
FTLN 0884	POINS Yes, faith, and let it be an excellent good thing.	
FTLN 0885	PRINCE It shall serve among wits of no higher breeding	
FTLN 0886	than thine.	35
FTLN 0887	POINS Go to. I stand the push of your one thing that	
FTLN 0888	you will tell.	
FTLN 0889	PRINCE Marry, I tell thee it is not meet that I should be	
FTLN 0890	sad, now my father is sick—albeit I could tell to	
FTLN 0891	thee, as to one it pleases me, for fault of a better, to	40
FTLN 0892	call my friend, I could be sad, and sad indeed too.	
FTLN 0893	POINS Very hardly, upon such a subject.	

FTLN 0894	PRINCE By this hand, thou thinkest me as far in the	
FTLN 0895	devil's book as thou and Falstaff for obduracy and	
FTLN 0896	persistency. Let the end try the man. But I tell thee,	45
FTLN 0897	my heart bleeds inwardly that my father is so sick;	
FTLN 0898	and keeping such vile company as thou art hath in	
FTLN 0899	reason taken from me all ostentation of sorrow.	
FTLN 0900	POINS The reason?	
FTLN 0901	PRINCE What wouldst thou think of me if I should	50
FTLN 0902	weep?	
FTLN 0903	POINS I would think thee a most princely hypocrite.	
FTLN 0904	PRINCE It would be every man's thought, and thou art	
FTLN 0905	a blessed fellow to think as every man thinks. Never	
FTLN 0906	a man's thought in the world keeps the roadway	55
FTLN 0907	better than thine. Every man would think me an	
FTLN 0908	hypocrite indeed. And what accites your most worshipful	
FTLN 0909	thought to think so?	
FTLN 0910	POINS Why, because you have been so lewd and so	
FTLN 0911	much engraffed to Falstaff.	60
FTLN 0912	PRINCE And to thee.	
FTLN 0913	POINS By this light, I am well spoke on. I can hear it	
FTLN 0914	with mine own ears. The worst that they can say of	
FTLN 0915	me is that I am a second brother, and that I am a	
FTLN 0916	proper fellow of my hands; and those two things, I	65
FTLN 0917	confess, I cannot help. By the Mass, here comes	
FTLN 0918	Bardolph.	
	•	
	Enter Bardolph and 「Page."	
FTLN 0919	PRINCE And the boy that I gave Falstaff. He had him	
FTLN 0920	from me Christian, and look if the fat villain have	
FTLN 0921	not transformed him ape.	70
FTLN 0922	BARDOLPH God save your Grace.	
FTLN 0923	PRINCE And yours, most noble Bardolph.	
FTLN 0924	POINS, <i>to Bardolph</i> Come, you virtuous ass, you bashful	
FTLN 0925	fool, must you be blushing? Wherefore blush	
FTLN 0926	you now? What a maidenly man-at-arms are you	75
	-	

FTLN 0927	become! Is 't such a matter to get a pottle-pot's	
FTLN 0928	maidenhead?	
FTLN 0929	PAGE He calls me [e'en now,] my lord, through a red	
FTLN 0930	lattice, and I could discern no part of his face from	
FTLN 0931	the window. At last I spied his eyes, and methought	80
FTLN 0932	he had made two holes in the ale-wife's (new)	
FTLN 0933	petticoat and so peeped through.	
FTLN 0934	PRINCE Has not the boy profited?	
FTLN 0935	BARDOLPH, <i>to Page</i> Away, you whoreson upright (rabbit),	
FTLN 0936	away!	85
FTLN 0937	PAGE Away, you rascally Althea's dream, away!	
FTLN 0938	PRINCE Instruct us, boy. What dream, boy?	
FTLN 0939	PAGE Marry, my lord, Althea dreamt she was delivered	
FTLN 0940	of a firebrand, and therefore I call him her dream.	
FTLN 0941	PRINCE A crown's worth of good interpretation. There	90
FTLN 0942	'tis, boy.	
FTLN 0943	POINS O, that this (good) blossom could be kept from	
FTLN 0944	cankers! Well, there is sixpence to preserve thee.	
	[He gives the Page money.]	
FTLN 0945	BARDOLPH An you do not make him (be) hanged among	
FTLN 0946	you, the gallows shall have wrong.	95
FTLN 0947	PRINCE And how doth thy master, Bardolph?	
FTLN 0948	BARDOLPH Well, my (good) lord. He heard of your	
FTLN 0949	Grace's coming to town. There's a letter for you.	
	THe gives the Prince a paper.	
FTLN 0950	POINS Delivered with good respect. And how doth the	
FTLN 0951	Martlemas your master?	100
FTLN 0952	BARDOLPH In bodily health, sir.	
FTLN 0953	POINS Marry, the immortal part needs a physician, but	
FTLN 0954	that moves not him. Though that be sick, it dies not.	
FTLN 0955	PRINCE I do allow this wen to be as familiar with me as	
FTLN 0956	my dog, and he holds his place, for look you how he	105
FTLN 0957	writes. He shows the letter to Poins.	
FTLN 0958	POINS reads the superscription John Falstaff, knight.	
FTLN 0959	Every man must know that as oft as he has occasion	

FTLN 0960	to name himself, even like those that are kin to the	
FTLN 0961	King, for they never prick their finger but they say	110
FTLN 0962	"There's some of the King's blood spilt." "How	
FTLN 0963	comes that?" says he that takes upon him not to	
FTLN 0964	conceive. The answer is as ready as a borrower's	
FTLN 0965	cap: "I am the King's poor cousin, sir."	
FTLN 0966	PRINCE Nay, they will be kin to us, or they will fetch it	115
FTLN 0967	from Japheth. But (to) the letter: "Reads." Sir John	
FTLN 0968	Falstaff, knight, to the son of the King nearest his	
FTLN 0969	father, Harry Prince of Wales, greeting.	
FTLN 0970	POINS Why, this is a certificate.	
FTLN 0971	PRINCE Peace!	120
FTLN 0972	[Reads.] I will imitate the honorable Romans in	
FTLN 0973	brevity.	
FTLN 0974	POINS He sure means brevity in breath, short-winded.	
FTLN 0975	[PRINCE reads] I commend me to thee, I commend thee,	
FTLN 0976	and I leave thee. Be not too familiar with Poins, for he	125
FTLN 0977	misuses thy favors so much that he swears thou art to	
FTLN 0978	marry his sister Nell. Repent at idle times as thou	
FTLN 0979	mayst, and so farewell.	
FTLN 0980	Thine by yea and no, which is as much as	
FTLN 0981	to say, as thou usest him,	130
FTLN 0982	Jack Falstaff with my $\langle familiars, \rangle$	
FTLN 0983	John with my brothers and sisters, and	
FTLN 0984	Sir John with all Europe.	
FTLN 0985	POINS My lord, I'll steep this letter in sack and make	
FTLN 0986	him eat it.	135
FTLN 0987	PRINCE That's to make him eat twenty of his words.	
FTLN 0988	But do you use me thus, Ned? Must I marry your	
FTLN 0989	sister?	
FTLN 0990	POINS God send the wench no worse fortune! But I	
FTLN 0991	never said so.	140
FTLN 0992	PRINCE Well, thus we play the fools with the time, and	
FTLN 0993	the spirits of the wise sit in the clouds and mock us.	
FTLN 0994	<i>To Bardolph</i> . Is your master here in London?	
FTLN 0995	BARDOLPH Yea, my lord.	

FTLN 0996	PRINCE Where sups he? Doth the old boar feed in the	145
FTLN 0997	old frank?	
FTLN 0998	BARDOLPH At the old place, my lord, in Eastcheap.	
FTLN 0999	PRINCE What company?	
FTLN 1000	PAGE Ephesians, my lord, of the old church.	
FTLN 1001	PRINCE Sup any women with him?	150
FTLN 1002	PAGE None, my lord, but old Mistress Quickly and	
FTLN 1003	Mistress Doll Tearsheet.	
FTLN 1004	PRINCE What pagan may that be?	
FTLN 1005	PAGE A proper gentlewoman, sir, and a kinswoman of	
FTLN 1006	my master's.	155
FTLN 1007	PRINCE Even such kin as the parish heifers are to the	
FTLN 1008	town bull.—Shall we steal upon them, Ned, at	
FTLN 1009	supper?	
FTLN 1010	POINS I am your shadow, my lord. I'll follow you.	
FTLN 1011	PRINCE Sirrah—you, boy—and Bardolph, no word to	160
FTLN 1012	your master that I am yet come to town. There's for	
FTLN 1013	your silence. The gives money.	
FTLN 1014	BARDOLPH I have no tongue, sir.	
FTLN 1015	PAGE And for mine, sir, I will govern it.	
FTLN 1016	PRINCE Fare you well. Go.	165
FTLN 1017	This Doll Tearsheet should be some road.	
FTLN 1018	POINS I warrant you, as common as the way between	
FTLN 1019	Saint Albans and London.	
FTLN 1020	PRINCE How might we see Falstaff bestow himself	
FTLN 1021	tonight in his true colors, and not ourselves be	170
FTLN 1022	seen?	
FTLN 1023	POINS Put on two leathern jerkins and aprons, and	
FTLN 1024	wait upon him at his table as drawers.	
FTLN 1025	PRINCE From a god to a bull: a heavy descension. It	
FTLN 1026	was Jove's case. From a (prince) to a 'prentice: a low	175
FTLN 1027	transformation that shall be mine, for in everything	
FTLN 1028	the purpose must weigh with the folly. Follow me,	
FTLN 1029	Ned.	
	They exit.	

(Scene 3) Enter Northumberland, his wife, and the wife to Harry Percy.

NORTHUMBERLAND I pray thee, loving wife and gentle daughter, FTLN 1030 Give even way unto my rough affairs. FTLN 1031 Put not you on the visage of the times FTLN 1032 And be, like them, to Percy troublesome. FTLN 1033 LADY NORTHUMBERLAND I have given over. I will speak no more. 5 FTLN 1034 Do what you will; your wisdom be your guide. FTLN 1035 NORTHUMBERLAND Alas, sweet wife, my honor is at pawn, FTLN 1036 And, but my going, nothing can redeem it. FTLN 1037 LADY PERCY O yet, for God's sake, go not to these wars. FTLN 1038 The time was, father, that you broke your word 10 FTLN 1039 When you were more (endeared) to it than now, FTLN 1040 When your own Percy, when my heart's dear Harry, FTLN 1041 Threw many a northward look to see his father FTLN 1042 Bring up his powers; but he did long in vain. FTLN 1043 Who then persuaded you to stay at home? 15 FTLN 1044 There were two honors lost, yours and your son's. FTLN 1045 For yours, the God of heaven brighten it. FTLN 1046 For his, it stuck upon him as the sun FTLN 1047 In the gray vault of heaven, and by his light FTLN 1048 Did all the chivalry of England move 20 FTLN 1049 FTLN 1050 To do brave acts. He was indeed the glass Wherein the noble youth did dress themselves. FTLN 1051 (He had no legs that practiced not his gait; FTLN 1052 And speaking thick, which nature made his blemish, FTLN 1053 Became the accents of the valiant; 25 FTLN 1054 For those that could speak low and tardily FTLN 1055

Would turn their own perfection to abuse

FTLN 1056

FTLN 1057	To seem like him. So that in speech, in gait,	
FTLN 1058	In diet, in affections of delight,	
FTLN 1059	In military rules, humors of blood,	30
FTLN 1060	He was the mark and glass, copy and book,	
FTLN 1061	That fashioned others. And him—O wondrous him!	
FTLN 1062	O miracle of men!—him did you leave,	
FTLN 1063	Second to none, unseconded by you,	
FTLN 1064	To look upon the hideous god of war	35
FTLN 1065	In disadvantage, to abide a field	
FTLN 1066	Where nothing but the sound of Hotspur's name	
FTLN 1067	Did seem defensible. So you left him.	
FTLN 1068	Never, O never, do his ghost the wrong	
FTLN 1069	To hold your honor more precise and nice	40
FTLN 1070	With others than with him. Let them alone.	
FTLN 1071	The Marshal and the Archbishop are strong.	
FTLN 1072	Had my sweet Harry had but half their numbers,	
FTLN 1073	Today might I, hanging on Hotspur's neck,	
FTLN 1074	Have talked of Monmouth's grave.	45
FTLN 1075	NORTHUMBERLAND Beshrew your	
FTLN 1076	heart,	
FTLN 1077	Fair daughter, you do draw my spirits from me	
FTLN 1078	With new lamenting ancient oversights.	
FTLN 1079	But I must go and meet with danger there,	50
FTLN 1080	Or it will seek me in another place	
FTLN 1081	And find me worse provided.	
FTLN 1082	LADY NORTHUMBERLAND O, fly to Scotland	
FTLN 1083	Till that the nobles and the armèd commons	
FTLN 1084	Have of their puissance made a little taste.	55
	LADY PERCY	
FTLN 1085	If they get ground and vantage of the King,	
FTLN 1086	Then join you with them like a rib of steel	
FTLN 1087	To make strength stronger; but, for all our loves,	
FTLN 1088	First let them try themselves. So did your son;	
FTLN 1089	He was so suffered. So came I a widow,	60
FTLN 1090	And never shall have length of life enough	

FTLN 1116

FTLN 1091	To rain upon remembrance with mine eyes	
FTLN 1092	That it may grow and sprout as high as heaven	
FTLN 1093	For recordation to my noble husband.	
	NORTHUMBERLAND	
FTLN 1094	Come, come, go in with me. 'Tis with my mind	65
FTLN 1095	As with the tide swelled up unto his height,	
FTLN 1096	That makes a still-stand, running neither way.	
FTLN 1097	Fain would I go to meet the Archbishop,	
FTLN 1098	But many thousand reasons hold me back.	
FTLN 1099	I will resolve for Scotland. There am I	70
FTLN 1100	Till time and vantage crave my company.	
	They exit.	
	(Scene 4)	
	Enter [Francis and another] Drawer.	
FTLN 1101	FRANCIS What the devil hast thou brought there—	
FTLN 1102	applejohns? Thou knowest Sir John cannot endure	
FTLN 1103	an applejohn.	
FTLN 1104	(SECOND) DRAWER Mass, thou sayst true. The Prince	
FTLN 1105	once set a dish of applejohns before him and told	5
FTLN 1103 FTLN 1106	him there were five more Sir Johns and, putting off	3
FTLN 1100	his hat, said "I will now take my leave of these six	
FTLN 1107	dry, round, old, withered knights." It angered him	
FTLN 1108	to the heart. But he hath forgot that.	
FTLN 1110	FRANCIS Why then, cover and set them down, and see if	10
FTLN 1111	thou canst find out Sneak's noise. Mistress Tearsheet	10
FTLN 1112	would fain hear some music. [Dispatch. The	
FTLN 1113	room where they supped is too hot. They'll come in	
FTLN 1114	straight.	
	244944	
	Enter Will.]	
FTLN 1115	Sirrah, here will be the Prince and Master	15

Poins anon, and they will put on two of our jerkins

FTLN 1117	and aprons, and Sir John must not know of it.	
FTLN 1118	Bardolph hath brought word.	
FTLN 1119	SECOND DRAWER By the Mass, here will be old utis. It	20
FTLN 1120	will be an excellent stratagem.	20
FTLN 1121	FRANCIS I'll see if I can find out Sneak.	
	He exits \(\text{with the Second Drawer.} \)	
	Enter (Hostess) and Doll Tearsheet.	
FTLN 1122	HOSTESS I' faith, sweetheart, methinks now you are in	
FTLN 1123	an excellent good temperality. Your pulsidge beats	
FTLN 1124	as extraordinarily as heart would desire, and your	
FTLN 1125	color, I warrant you, is as red as any rose, in good	25
FTLN 1126	truth, la. But, i' faith, you have drunk too much	
FTLN 1127	canaries, and that's a marvellous searching wine,	
FTLN 1128	and it perfumes the blood ere one can say "What's	
FTLN 1129	this?" How do you now?	
FTLN 1130	DOLL Better than I was. Hem.	30
FTLN 1131	HOSTESS Why, that's well said. A good heart's worth	
FTLN 1132	gold. Lo, here comes Sir John.	
	Enter Sir John (Falstaff.)	
	FALSTAFF, "singing"	
FTLN 1133	When Arthur first in court—	
FTLN 1134	<i>To Will.</i> Empty the jordan. <i>Will exits.</i>	
FTLN 1135	And was a worthy king—	35
FTLN 1136	How now, Mistress Doll?	
FTLN 1137	HOSTESS Sick of a calm, yea, good faith.	
FTLN 1138	FALSTAFF So is all her sect. An they be once in a calm,	
FTLN 1139	they are sick.	
FTLN 1140	DOLL A pox damn you, you muddy rascal. Is that all the	40
FTLN 1141	comfort you give me?	
FTLN 1142	FALSTAFF You make fat rascals, Mistress Doll.	
FTLN 1143	DOLL I make them? Gluttony and diseases make (them);	
FTLN 1144	I make them not.	

FTLN 1145 FTLN 1146 FTLN 1147 FTLN 1148	FALSTAFF If the cook help to make the gluttony, you help to make the diseases, Doll. We catch of you, Doll, we catch of you. Grant that, my poor virtue, grant that.	45
FTLN 1149	DOLL Yea, joy, our chains and our jewels.	
FTLN 1150	FALSTAFF Your brooches, pearls, and ouches—for to	50
FTLN 1151	serve bravely is to come halting off, you know; to	
FTLN 1152	come off the breach with his pike bent bravely, and	
FTLN 1153	to surgery bravely, to venture upon the charged	
FTLN 1154	chambers bravely—	
FTLN 1155	[DOLL Hang yourself, you muddy conger, hang yourself!]	55
FTLN 1156	HOSTESS By my troth, this is the old fashion. You two	
FTLN 1157	never meet but you fall to some discord. You are	
FTLN 1158	both, i' good truth, as rheumatic as two dry toasts.	
FTLN 1159	You cannot one bear with another's confirmities.	
FTLN 1160	What the good-year! One must bear, and \[\text{to Doll} \]	60
FTLN 1161	that must be you. You are the weaker vessel, as they	
FTLN 1162	say, the emptier vessel.	
FTLN 1163	DOLL Can a weak empty vessel bear such a huge full	
FTLN 1164	hogshead? There's a whole merchant's venture of	
FTLN 1165	Bordeaux stuff in him. You have not seen a hulk	65
FTLN 1166	better stuffed in the hold.—Come, I'll be friends	
FTLN 1167	with thee, Jack. Thou art going to the wars, and	
FTLN 1168	whether I shall ever see thee again or no, there is	
FTLN 1169	nobody cares.	
	Enter Drawer.	
ETI NI 1170	DRAWER Sir Angient Distol's below and would small	70
FTLN 1170	DRAWER Sir, Ancient Pistol's below and would speak with you.	70
FTLN 1171	DOLL Hang him, swaggering rascal! Let him not come	
FTLN 1172 FTLN 1173	hither. It is the foul-mouthed'st rogue in England.	
FTLN 1173 FTLN 1174	HOSTESS If he swagger, let him not come here. No, by	
FTLN 1174 FTLN 1175	my faith, I must live among my neighbors. I'll no	75
FTLN 1175 FTLN 1176	swaggerers. I am in good name and fame with the	13
- 121, 1170	5 abbereis. I am in bood name and rame with the	

FTLN 1177	very best. Shut the door. There comes no swaggerers	
FTLN 1178	here. I have not lived all this while to have	
FTLN 1179	swaggering now. Shut the door, I pray you.	
FTLN 1180	FALSTAFF Dost thou hear, hostess?	80
FTLN 1181	HOSTESS Pray you pacify yourself, Sir John. There	
FTLN 1182	comes no swaggerers here.	
FTLN 1183	FALSTAFF Dost thou hear? It is mine ancient.	
FTLN 1184	HOSTESS Tilly-vally, Sir John, ne'er tell me. And your	
FTLN 1185	ancient swaggerer comes not in my doors. I was	85
FTLN 1186	before Master Tisick the debuty t' other day, and, as	
FTLN 1187	he said to me—'twas no longer ago than Wednesday	
FTLN 1188	last, i' good faith—"Neighbor Quickly," says	
FTLN 1189	he—Master Dumb, our minister, was by then—	
FTLN 1190	"Neighbor Quickly," says he, "receive those that	90
FTLN 1191	are civil, for," said he, "you are in an ill name."	
FTLN 1192	Now he said so, I can tell whereupon. "For," says	
FTLN 1193	he, "you are an honest woman, and well thought	
FTLN 1194	on. Therefore take heed what guests you receive.	
FTLN 1195	Receive," says he, "no swaggering companions."	95
FTLN 1196	There comes none here. You would bless you to	
FTLN 1197	hear what he said. No, I'll no swaggerers.	
FTLN 1198	FALSTAFF He's no swaggerer, hostess, a tame cheater, i'	
FTLN 1199	faith. You may stroke him as gently as a puppy	
FTLN 1200	greyhound. He'll not swagger with a Barbary hen if	100
FTLN 1201	her feathers turn back in any show of resistance.—	
FTLN 1202	Call him up, drawer.	
FTLN 1203	HOSTESS "Cheater" call you him? I will bar no honest	
FTLN 1204	man my house, nor no cheater, but I do not love	
FTLN 1205	swaggering. By my troth, I am the worse when one	105
FTLN 1206	says "swagger." Feel, masters, how I shake; look	
FTLN 1207	you, I warrant you.	
FTLN 1208	DOLL So you do, hostess.	
FTLN 1209	HOSTESS Do I? Yea, in very truth, do I, an 'twere an	
FTLN 1210	aspen leaf. I cannot abide swaggerers.	110

Enter Ancient Pistol, \(Bardolph, and \) \(\Gamma \) age. \(\Gamma \)

FTLN 1211	PISTOL God save you, Sir John.	
FTLN 1212	FALSTAFF Welcome, Ancient Pistol. Here, Pistol, I	
FTLN 1213	charge you with a cup of sack. Do you discharge	
FTLN 1214	upon mine hostess.	
FTLN 1215	PISTOL I will discharge upon her, Sir John, with two	115
FTLN 1216	bullets.	
FTLN 1217	FALSTAFF She is pistol-proof. Sir, you shall not hardly	
FTLN 1218	offend her.	
FTLN 1219	HOSTESS Come, I'll drink no proofs nor no bullets. I'll	
FTLN 1220	drink no more than will do me good, for no man's	120
FTLN 1221	pleasure, I.	
FTLN 1222	PISTOL Then, to you, Mistress Dorothy! I will charge	
FTLN 1223	you.	
FTLN 1224	DOLL Charge me? I scorn you, scurvy companion.	
FTLN 1225	What, you poor, base, rascally, cheating lack-linen	125
FTLN 1226	mate! Away, you mouldy rogue, away! I am meat for	
FTLN 1227	your master.	
FTLN 1228	PISTOL I know you, Mistress Dorothy.	
FTLN 1229	DOLL Away, you cutpurse rascal, you filthy bung, away!	
FTLN 1230	By this wine, I'll thrust my knife in your mouldy	130
FTLN 1231	chaps an you play the saucy cuttle with me. Away,	
FTLN 1232	you bottle-ale rascal, you basket-hilt stale juggler,	
FTLN 1233	you. Since when, I pray you, sir? God's light, with	
FTLN 1234	two points on your shoulder? Much!	
FTLN 1235	PISTOL God let me not live but I will murder your ruff	135
FTLN 1236	for this.	
FTLN 1237	[FALSTAFF No more, Pistol. I would not have you go off	
FTLN 1238	here. Discharge yourself of our company, Pistol.]	
FTLN 1239	HOSTESS No, good Captain Pistol, not here, sweet	
FTLN 1240	captain!	140
FTLN 1241	DOLL Captain? Thou abominable damned cheater, art	
FTLN 1242	thou not ashamed to be called captain? An captains	

FTLN 1243	were of my mind, they would truncheon you out for	
FTLN 1244	taking their names upon you before you have	
FTLN 1245	earned them. You a captain? You slave, for what?	145
FTLN 1246	For tearing a poor whore's ruff in a bawdy house?	
FTLN 1247	He a captain! Hang him, rogue. He lives upon	
FTLN 1248	mouldy stewed prunes and dried cakes. A captain?	
FTLN 1249	God's light, these villains will make the word as	
FTLN 1250	odious [as the word "occupy," which was an excellent	150
FTLN 1251	good word before it was ill sorted.] Therefore	
FTLN 1252	captains had need look to 't.	
FTLN 1253	BARDOLPH, \[\text{to Pistol} \] Pray thee go down, good ancient.	
FTLN 1254	FALSTAFF Hark thee hither, Mistress Doll.	
FTLN 1255	PISTOL, \[\text{to Bardolph} \] Not I. I tell thee what, Corporal	155
FTLN 1256	Bardolph, I could tear her. I'll be revenged of her.	
FTLN 1257	PAGE Pray thee go down.	
FTLN 1258	PISTOL I'll see her damned first to Pluto's damnèd	
FTLN 1259	lake, by this hand, to th' infernal deep with Erebus	
FTLN 1260	and tortures vile also. Hold hook and line, say I.	160
FTLN 1261	Down, down, dogs! Down, (Fates!) Have we not	
FTLN 1262	Hiren here? <i>He draws his sword.</i>	
FTLN 1263	HOSTESS Good Captain Peesell, be quiet. 'Tis very late,	
FTLN 1264	i' faith. I beseek you now, aggravate your choler.	
FTLN 1265	PISTOL These be good humors indeed. Shall pack-horses	165
FTLN 1266	and hollow pampered jades of Asia, which	
FTLN 1267	cannot go but thirty mile a day, compare with	
FTLN 1268	Caesars and with cannibals and Troyant Greeks?	
FTLN 1269	Nay, rather damn them with King Cerberus, and let	
FTLN 1270	the welkin roar. Shall we fall foul for toys?	170
FTLN 1271	HOSTESS By my troth, captain, these are very bitter	
FTLN 1272	words.	
FTLN 1273	BARDOLPH Begone, good ancient. This will grow to a	
FTLN 1274	brawl anon.	
FTLN 1275	PISTOL (Die) men like dogs! Give crowns like pins! Have	175
FTLN 1276	we not Hiren here?	

FTLN 1277	HOSTESS O' my word, captain, there's none such here.	
FTLN 1278	What the good-year, do you think I would deny her?	
FTLN 1279	For God's sake, be quiet.	
FTLN 1280	PISTOL Then feed and be fat, my fair Calipolis. Come,	180
FTLN 1281	give 's some sack. Si fortune me tormente, sperato	
FTLN 1282	me contento. Fear we broadsides? No, let the fiend	
FTLN 1283	give fire. Give me some sack, and, sweetheart, lie	
FTLN 1284	thou there. <i>Laying down his sword</i> . Come we to	
FTLN 1285	full points here? And are etceteras nothings?	185
FTLN 1286	FALSTAFF Pistol, I would be quiet.	
FTLN 1287	PISTOL Sweet knight, I kiss thy neaf. What, we have	
FTLN 1288	seen the seven stars.	
FTLN 1289	DOLL For God's sake, thrust him downstairs. I cannot	
FTLN 1290	endure such a fustian rascal.	190
FTLN 1291	PISTOL "Thrust him downstairs"? Know we not Galloway	
FTLN 1292	nags?	
FTLN 1293	FALSTAFF Quoit him down, Bardolph, like a shove-groat	
FTLN 1294	shilling. Nay, an he do nothing but speak	
FTLN 1295	nothing, he shall be nothing here.	195
FTLN 1296	BARDOLPH Come, get you downstairs.	
FTLN 1297	PISTOL, <i>staking up his sword</i> What, shall we have	
FTLN 1298	incision? Shall we imbrue? Then death rock me	
FTLN 1299	asleep, abridge my doleful days. Why then, let	
FTLN 1300	grievous, ghastly, gaping wounds untwind the Sisters	200
FTLN 1301	Three. Come, Atropos, I say.	
FTLN 1302	HOSTESS Here's goodly stuff toward!	
FTLN 1303	FALSTAFF Give me my rapier, boy.	
FTLN 1304	DOLL I pray thee, Jack, I pray thee do not draw.	
FTLN 1305	FALSTAFF, \[\text{to Pistol} \] Get you downstairs. \[\text{They fight.} \]	205
FTLN 1306	HOSTESS Here's a goodly tumult. I'll forswear keeping	
FTLN 1307	house afore I'll be in these tirrits and frights. So,	
FTLN 1308	murder, I warrant now. Alas, alas, put up your	
FTLN 1309	naked weapons, put up your naked weapons.	
	「Bardolph and Pistol exit."	
FTLN 1310	DOLL I pray thee, Jack, be quiet. The rascal's gone. Ah,	210
FTLN 1311	you whoreson little valiant villain, you.	

FTLN 1313	HOSTESS, <i>to Falstaff</i> Are you not hurt i' th' groin? Methought he made a shrewd thrust at your belly.	
	「Enter Bardolph. ¬	
FTLN 1314	FALSTAFF Have you turned him out o' doors?	
FTLN 1315	BARDOLPH Yea, sir. The rascal's drunk. You have hurt	215
FTLN 1316	him, sir, i' th' shoulder.	
FTLN 1317	FALSTAFF A rascal to brave me!	
FTLN 1318	DOLL Ah, you sweet little rogue, you. Alas, poor ape,	
FTLN 1319	how thou sweat'st! Come, let me wipe thy face.	
FTLN 1320	Come on, you whoreson chops. Ah, rogue, i' faith, I	220
FTLN 1321	love thee. Thou art as valorous as Hector of Troy,	
FTLN 1322	worth five of Agamemnon, and ten times better	
FTLN 1323	than the Nine Worthies. Ah, villain!	
FTLN 1324	FALSTAFF Ah, rascally slave! I will toss the rogue in a	
FTLN 1325	blanket.	225
FTLN 1326	DOLL Do, an thou darest for thy heart. An thou dost, I'll	
FTLN 1327	canvass thee between a pair of sheets.	
	Enter [Musicians and Francis.]	
FTLN 1328	PACE. The music is some sir	
	PAGE THE HIUSIC IS COINE, SIL.	
FTLN 1329	PAGE The music is come, sir. FALSTAFF Let them play.—Play, sirs.—Sit on my knee,	
	FALSTAFF Let them play.—Play, sirs.—Sit on my knee,	230
FTLN 1329	FALSTAFF Let them play.—Play, sirs.—Sit on my knee, Doll. A rascal bragging slave! The rogue fled from	230
FTLN 1329 FTLN 1330	FALSTAFF Let them play.—Play, sirs.—Sit on my knee, Doll. A rascal bragging slave! The rogue fled from me like quicksilver.	230
FTLN 1329 FTLN 1330 FTLN 1331	FALSTAFF Let them play.—Play, sirs.—Sit on my knee, Doll. A rascal bragging slave! The rogue fled from me like quicksilver. DOLL I' faith, and thou followed'st him like a church.	230
FTLN 1329 FTLN 1330 FTLN 1331 FTLN 1332	FALSTAFF Let them play.—Play, sirs.—Sit on my knee, Doll. A rascal bragging slave! The rogue fled from me like quicksilver.	230
FTLN 1329 FTLN 1330 FTLN 1331 FTLN 1332 FTLN 1333	 FALSTAFF Let them play.—Play, sirs.—Sit on my knee, Doll. A rascal bragging slave! The rogue fled from me like quicksilver. DOLL I' faith, and thou followed'st him like a church. Thou whoreson little tidy Bartholomew boar-pig, 	230 235
FTLN 1329 FTLN 1330 FTLN 1331 FTLN 1332 FTLN 1333 FTLN 1334	 FALSTAFF Let them play.—Play, sirs.—Sit on my knee, Doll. A rascal bragging slave! The rogue fled from me like quicksilver. DOLL I' faith, and thou followed'st him like a church. Thou whoreson little tidy Bartholomew boar-pig, when wilt thou leave fighting a-days and foining a-nights 	
FTLN 1329 FTLN 1330 FTLN 1331 FTLN 1332 FTLN 1333 FTLN 1334 FTLN 1335	 FALSTAFF Let them play.—Play, sirs.—Sit on my knee, Doll. A rascal bragging slave! The rogue fled from me like quicksilver. DOLL I' faith, and thou followed'st him like a church. Thou whoreson little tidy Bartholomew boar-pig, when wilt thou leave fighting a-days and foining a-nights and begin to patch up thine old body for 	
FTLN 1329 FTLN 1330 FTLN 1331 FTLN 1332 FTLN 1333 FTLN 1334 FTLN 1335 FTLN 1336	Doll. A rascal bragging slave! The rogue fled from me like quicksilver. DOLL I' faith, and thou followed'st him like a church. Thou whoreson little tidy Bartholomew boar-pig, when wilt thou leave fighting a-days and foining a-nights and begin to patch up thine old body for heaven? Enter behind them Prince and Poins (disguised.)	
FTLN 1329 FTLN 1330 FTLN 1331 FTLN 1332 FTLN 1333 FTLN 1334 FTLN 1335 FTLN 1336	 Doll. A rascal bragging slave! The rogue fled from me like quicksilver. DOLL I' faith, and thou followed'st him like a church. Thou whoreson little tidy Bartholomew boar-pig, when wilt thou leave fighting a-days and foining a-nights and begin to patch up thine old body for heaven? 	
FTLN 1329 FTLN 1330 FTLN 1331 FTLN 1332 FTLN 1333 FTLN 1334 FTLN 1335 FTLN 1336	 FALSTAFF Let them play.—Play, sirs.—Sit on my knee, Doll. A rascal bragging slave! The rogue fled from me like quicksilver. DOLL I' faith, and thou followed'st him like a church. Thou whoreson little tidy Bartholomew boar-pig, when wilt thou leave fighting a-days and foining a-nights and begin to patch up thine old body for heaven? Enter 「behind them Prince and Poins ⟨disguised.⟩ FALSTAFF Peace, good Doll. Do not speak like a death's-head; 	

FTLN 1341	made a good pantler; he would 'a chipped bread	
FTLN 1342	well.	
FTLN 1343	DOLL They say Poins has a good wit.	
FTLN 1344	FALSTAFF He a good wit? Hang him, baboon. His wit's	
FTLN 1345	as thick as Tewkesbury mustard. There's no more	245
FTLN 1346	conceit in him than is in a mallet.	
FTLN 1347	DOLL Why does the Prince love him so then?	
FTLN 1348	FALSTAFF Because their legs are both of a bigness, and	
FTLN 1349	he plays at quoits well, and eats conger and fennel,	
FTLN 1350	and drinks off candles' ends for flap-dragons, and	250
FTLN 1351	rides the wild mare with the boys, and jumps upon	
FTLN 1352	joint stools, and swears with a good grace, and	
FTLN 1353	wears his boots very smooth like unto the sign of	
FTLN 1354	the Leg, and breeds no bate with telling of discreet	
FTLN 1355	stories, and such other gambol faculties he has that	255
FTLN 1356	show a weak mind and an able body, for the which	
FTLN 1357	the Prince admits him; for the Prince himself is	
FTLN 1358	such another. The weight of a hair will turn (the)	
FTLN 1359	scales between their avoirdupois.	
FTLN 1360	PRINCE, [aside to Poins] Would not this nave of a wheel	260
FTLN 1361	have his ears cut off?	
FTLN 1362	POINS Let's beat him before his whore.	
FTLN 1363	PRINCE Look whe'er the withered elder hath not his	
FTLN 1364	poll clawed like a parrot.	
FTLN 1365	POINS Is it not strange that desire should so many years	265
FTLN 1366	outlive performance?	
FTLN 1367	FALSTAFF Kiss me, Doll.	
FTLN 1368	PRINCE, [aside to Poins] Saturn and Venus this year in	
FTLN 1369	conjunction! What says th' almanac to that?	
FTLN 1370	POINS And look whether the fiery trigon, his man, be	270
FTLN 1371	not lisping to his (master's) old tables, his notebook,	
FTLN 1372	his counsel keeper.	
FTLN 1373	FALSTAFF, <i>to Doll</i> Thou dost give me flattering busses.	
FTLN 1374	DOLL By my troth, I kiss thee with a most constant	
FTLN 1375	heart.	275
FTLN 1376	FALSTAFF I am old, I am old.	

FTLN 1377	DOLL I love thee better than I love e'er a scurvy young	
FTLN 1378	boy of them all.	
FTLN 1379	FALSTAFF What stuff wilt (thou) have a kirtle of? I shall	
FTLN 1380	receive money o' Thursday; (thou) shalt have a cap	280
FTLN 1381	tomorrow. A merry song! Come, it grows late. We'll	
FTLN 1382	to bed. Thou 'lt forget me when I am gone.	
FTLN 1383	DOLL By my troth, thou 'lt set me a-weeping an thou	
FTLN 1384	sayst so. Prove that ever I dress myself handsome till	
FTLN 1385	thy return. Well, harken a' th' end.	285
FTLN 1386	FALSTAFF Some sack, Francis.	
FTLN 1387	PRINCE, POINS, <i>coming forward</i> Anon, anon, sir.	
FTLN 1388	FALSTAFF Ha? A bastard son of the King's?—And art	
FTLN 1389	not thou Poins his brother?	
FTLN 1390	PRINCE Why, thou globe of sinful continents, what a	290
FTLN 1391	life dost thou lead?	
FTLN 1392	FALSTAFF A better than thou. I am a gentleman. Thou	
FTLN 1393	art a drawer.	
FTLN 1394	PRINCE Very true, sir, and I come to draw you out by	
FTLN 1395	the ears.	295
FTLN 1396	HOSTESS O, the Lord preserve thy (good) Grace! By my	
FTLN 1397	troth, welcome to London. Now the Lord bless that	
FTLN 1398	sweet face of thine. O Jesu, are you come from	
FTLN 1399	Wales?	
FTLN 1400	FALSTAFF, <i>to Prince</i> Thou whoreson mad compound	300
FTLN 1401	of majesty, by this light flesh and corrupt blood,	
FTLN 1402	thou art welcome.	
FTLN 1403	DOLL How? You fat fool, I scorn you.	
FTLN 1404	POINS My lord, he will drive you out of your revenge	
FTLN 1405	and turn all to a merriment if you take not the heat.	305
FTLN 1406	PRINCE, <i>to Falstaff</i> You whoreson candle-mine, you,	
FTLN 1407	how vilely did you speak of me (even) now before	
FTLN 1408	this honest, virtuous, civil gentlewoman!	
FTLN 1409	HOSTESS God's blessing of your good heart, and so she	
FTLN 1410	is, by my troth.	310
FTLN 1411	FALSTAFF, <i>to Prince</i> Didst thou hear me?	

FTLN 1412	PRINCE Yea, and you knew me as you did when you ran	
FTLN 1413	away by Gad's Hill. You knew I was at your back,	
FTLN 1414	and spoke it on purpose to try my patience.	
FTLN 1415	FALSTAFF No, no, not so. I did not think thou wast	315
FTLN 1416	within hearing.	
FTLN 1417	PRINCE I shall drive you, then, to confess the wilfull	
FTLN 1418	abuse, and then I know how to handle you.	
FTLN 1419	FALSTAFF No abuse, Hal, o' mine honor, no abuse.	
FTLN 1420	PRINCE Not to dispraise me and call me pantler and	320
FTLN 1421	bread-chipper and I know not what?	
FTLN 1422	FALSTAFF No abuse, Hal.	
FTLN 1423	POINS No abuse?	
FTLN 1424	FALSTAFF No abuse, Ned, i' th' world, honest Ned,	
FTLN 1425	none. I dispraised him before the wicked, (\(\text{to} \)	325
FTLN 1426	<i>Prince</i> that the wicked might not fall in love with	
FTLN 1427	thee; in which doing, I have done the part of a	
FTLN 1428	careful friend and a true subject, and thy father is to	
FTLN 1429	give me thanks for it. No abuse, Hal.—None, Ned,	
FTLN 1430	none. No, faith, boys, none.	330
FTLN 1431	PRINCE See now whether pure fear and entire cowardice	
FTLN 1432	doth not make thee wrong this virtuous gentlewoman	
FTLN 1433	to close with us. Is she of the wicked, is	
FTLN 1434	thine hostess here of the wicked, or is thy boy of the	
FTLN 1435	wicked, or honest Bardolph, whose zeal burns in	335
FTLN 1436	his nose, of the wicked?	
FTLN 1437	POINS Answer, thou dead elm, answer.	
FTLN 1438	FALSTAFF The fiend hath pricked down Bardolph irrecoverable,	
FTLN 1439	and his face is Lucifer's privy kitchen,	
FTLN 1440	where he doth nothing but roast malt-worms. For	340
FTLN 1441	the boy, there is a good angel about him, but the	
FTLN 1442	devil blinds him too.	
FTLN 1443	PRINCE For the women?	
FTLN 1444	FALSTAFF For one of them, she's in hell already and	
FTLN 1445	burns poor souls. For th' other, I owe her money,	345
FTLN 1446	and whether she be damned for that I know not.	

FTLN 1447	HOSTESS No, I warrant you.	
FTLN 1448	FALSTAFF No, I think thou art not. I think thou art quit	
FTLN 1449	for that. Marry, there is another indictment upon	
FTLN 1450	thee for suffering flesh to be eaten in thy house	350
FTLN 1451	contrary to the law, for the which I think thou wilt	
FTLN 1452	howl.	
FTLN 1453	HOSTESS All vitlars do so. What's a joint of mutton or	
FTLN 1454	two in a whole Lent?	
FTLN 1455	PRINCE, <i>to Doll</i> You, gentlewoman.	355
FTLN 1456	DOLL What says your Grace?	
FTLN 1457	FALSTAFF His grace says that which his flesh rebels	
FTLN 1458	against.	
	Peto knocks at door.	
FTLN 1459	HOSTESS Who knocks so loud at door? Look to th' door	
FTLN 1460	there, Francis. Francis exits.	360
	〈Enter Peto.〉	
FTLN 1461	PRINCE Peto, how now, what news?	
	PETO	
FTLN 1461 FTLN 1462	The King your father is at Westminster,	
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts	
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along	
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464 FTLN 1465	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along I met and overtook a dozen captains,	365
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464 FTLN 1465 FTLN 1466	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along I met and overtook a dozen captains, Bareheaded, sweating, knocking at the taverns	365
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464 FTLN 1465	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along I met and overtook a dozen captains, Bareheaded, sweating, knocking at the taverns And asking everyone for Sir John Falstaff.	365
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464 FTLN 1465 FTLN 1466 FTLN 1467	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along I met and overtook a dozen captains, Bareheaded, sweating, knocking at the taverns And asking everyone for Sir John Falstaff. PRINCE	365
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464 FTLN 1465 FTLN 1466 FTLN 1467	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along I met and overtook a dozen captains, Bareheaded, sweating, knocking at the taverns And asking everyone for Sir John Falstaff. PRINCE By heaven, Poins, I feel me much to blame	365
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464 FTLN 1465 FTLN 1466 FTLN 1467 FTLN 1468 FTLN 1469	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along I met and overtook a dozen captains, Bareheaded, sweating, knocking at the taverns And asking everyone for Sir John Falstaff. PRINCE By heaven, Poins, I feel me much to blame So idly to profane the precious time	
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464 FTLN 1465 FTLN 1466 FTLN 1467 FTLN 1468 FTLN 1469 FTLN 1470	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along I met and overtook a dozen captains, Bareheaded, sweating, knocking at the taverns And asking everyone for Sir John Falstaff. PRINCE By heaven, Poins, I feel me much to blame So idly to profane the precious time When tempest of commotion, like the south	365 370
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464 FTLN 1465 FTLN 1466 FTLN 1467 FTLN 1468 FTLN 1469 FTLN 1470 FTLN 1471	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along I met and overtook a dozen captains, Bareheaded, sweating, knocking at the taverns And asking everyone for Sir John Falstaff. PRINCE By heaven, Poins, I feel me much to blame So idly to profane the precious time When tempest of commotion, like the south Borne with black vapor, doth begin to melt	
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464 FTLN 1465 FTLN 1466 FTLN 1467 FTLN 1469 FTLN 1470 FTLN 1471 FTLN 1472	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along I met and overtook a dozen captains, Bareheaded, sweating, knocking at the taverns And asking everyone for Sir John Falstaff. PRINCE By heaven, Poins, I feel me much to blame So idly to profane the precious time When tempest of commotion, like the south Borne with black vapor, doth begin to melt And drop upon our bare unarmèd heads.—	
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464 FTLN 1465 FTLN 1466 FTLN 1467 FTLN 1469 FTLN 1470 FTLN 1471 FTLN 1472 FTLN 1473	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along I met and overtook a dozen captains, Bareheaded, sweating, knocking at the taverns And asking everyone for Sir John Falstaff. PRINCE By heaven, Poins, I feel me much to blame So idly to profane the precious time When tempest of commotion, like the south Borne with black vapor, doth begin to melt And drop upon our bare unarmèd heads.— Give me my sword and cloak.—Falstaff, good	
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464 FTLN 1465 FTLN 1466 FTLN 1467 FTLN 1469 FTLN 1470 FTLN 1471 FTLN 1472 FTLN 1473 FTLN 1474	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along I met and overtook a dozen captains, Bareheaded, sweating, knocking at the taverns And asking everyone for Sir John Falstaff. PRINCE By heaven, Poins, I feel me much to blame So idly to profane the precious time When tempest of commotion, like the south Borne with black vapor, doth begin to melt And drop upon our bare unarmèd heads.— Give me my sword and cloak.—Falstaff, good night. Prince, Peto, and Poins exit.	370
FTLN 1462 FTLN 1463 FTLN 1464 FTLN 1465 FTLN 1466 FTLN 1467 FTLN 1469 FTLN 1470 FTLN 1471 FTLN 1472 FTLN 1473	The King your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts Come from the north, and as I came along I met and overtook a dozen captains, Bareheaded, sweating, knocking at the taverns And asking everyone for Sir John Falstaff. PRINCE By heaven, Poins, I feel me much to blame So idly to profane the precious time When tempest of commotion, like the south Borne with black vapor, doth begin to melt And drop upon our bare unarmèd heads.— Give me my sword and cloak.—Falstaff, good	

FTLN 1477	(<i>Knocking</i> . <i>Bardolph exits</i> .) More knocking at the	
FTLN 1478	door? (<i>Bardolph returns</i> .) How now, what's the	
FTLN 1479	matter?	
FILN 14/9		
TTT 1. 4.400	BARDOLPH Very more to account a improve and to	200
FTLN 1480	You must away to court, sir, presently.	380
FTLN 1481	A dozen captains stay at door for you.	
FTLN 1482	FALSTAFF, to Page Pay the musicians, sirrah.—	
FTLN 1483	Farewell, hostess.—Farewell, Doll. You see, my	
FTLN 1484	good wenches, how men of merit are sought after.	
FTLN 1485	The undeserver may sleep when the man of action	385
FTLN 1486	is called on. Farewell, good wenches. If I be not sent	
FTLN 1487	away post, I will see you again ere I go.	
FTLN 1488	DOLL I cannot speak. If my heart be not ready to	
FTLN 1489	burst—well, sweet Jack, have a care of thyself.	
FTLN 1490	FALSTAFF Farewell, farewell.	390
	He exits \(\text{with Bardolph, Page, and Musicians.} \)	
FTLN 1491	HOSTESS Well, fare thee well. I have known thee these	
FTLN 1492	twenty-nine years, come peasecod time, but an	
FTLN 1493	honester and truer-hearted man—well, fare thee	
FTLN 1494	well.	
FTLN 1495	BARDOLPH, [within] Mistress Tearsheet!	395
FTLN 1496	HOSTESS What's the matter?	
FTLN 1497	BARDOLPH, [within] Bid Mistress Tearsheet come to my	
FTLN 1498	master.	
FTLN 1499	HOSTESS O, run, Doll, run, run, good Doll. [Come.—	
FTLN 1500	She comes blubbered.—Yea! Will you come, Doll?]	400
	They exit.	

(Scene 1) Enter the King in his nightgown (with a Page.)

KING Go call the Earls of Surrey and of Warwick; FTLN 1501 But, ere they come, bid them o'erread these letters FTLN 1502 And well consider of them. Make good speed. FTLN 1503 [Page] (exits.) FTLN 1504 How many thousand of my poorest subjects Are at this hour asleep! O sleep, O gentle sleep, 5 FTLN 1505 Nature's soft nurse, how have I frighted thee, FTLN 1506 That thou no more wilt weigh my eyelids down FTLN 1507 And steep my senses in forgetfulness? FTLN 1508 Why rather, sleep, liest thou in smoky cribs, FTLN 1509 Upon uneasy pallets stretching thee, 10 FTLN 1510 And hushed with buzzing night-flies to thy slumber, FTLN 1511 Than in the perfumed chambers of the great, FTLN 1512 Under the canopies of costly state, FTLN 1513 And lulled with sound of sweetest melody? FTLN 1514 O thou dull god, why liest thou with the vile 15 FTLN 1515 In loathsome beds and leavest the kingly couch FTLN 1516 A watch-case or a common 'larum bell? FTLN 1517 Wilt thou upon the high and giddy (mast) FTLN 1518 Seal up the shipboy's eyes and rock his brains FTLN 1519 In cradle of the rude imperious surge 20 FTLN 1520 And in the visitation of the winds, FTLN 1521

FTLN 1522	Who take the ruffian (billows) by the top,	
FTLN 1523	Curling their monstrous heads and hanging them	
FTLN 1524	With deafing clamor in the slippery clouds	
FTLN 1525	That with the hurly death itself awakes?	25
FTLN 1526	Canst thou, O partial sleep, give (thy) repose	
FTLN 1527	To the wet (sea-boy) in an hour so rude,	
FTLN 1528	And, in the calmest and most stillest night,	
FTLN 1529	With all appliances and means to boot,	
FTLN 1530	Deny it to a king? Then, happy low, lie down.	30
FTLN 1531	Uneasy lies the head that wears a crown.	
	Enter Warwick, Surrey and Sir John Blunt.	
	WARWICK	
FTLN 1532	Many good morrows to your Majesty.	
FTLN 1533	KING Is it good morrow, lords?	
FTLN 1534	WARWICK 'Tis one o'clock, and past.	
	KING	
FTLN 1535	Why then, good morrow to you all, my lords.	35
FTLN 1536	Have you read o'er the letter that I sent you?	
FTLN 1537	WARWICK We have, my liege.	
	KING	
FTLN 1538	Then you perceive the body of our kingdom	
FTLN 1539	How foul it is, what rank diseases grow,	
FTLN 1540	And with what danger near the heart of it.	40
	WARWICK	
FTLN 1541	It is but as a body yet distempered,	
FTLN 1542	Which to his former strength may be restored	
FTLN 1543	With good advice and little medicine.	
FTLN 1544	My Lord Northumberland will soon be cooled.	
	KING	
FTLN 1545	O God, that one might read the book of fate	45
FTLN 1546	And see the revolution of the times	
FTLN 1547	Make mountains level, and the continent,	
FTLN 1548	Weary of solid firmness, melt itself	
FTLN 1549	Into the sea, and other times to see	

FTLN 1550	The beachy girdle of the ocean	50
FTLN 1551	Too wide for Neptune's hips; how chance's mocks	30
FTLN 1552	And changes fill the cup of alteration	
FTLN 1553	With divers liquors! [O, if this were seen,	
FTLN 1554	The happiest youth, viewing his progress through,	
FTLN 1555	What perils past, what crosses to ensue,	55
FTLN 1556	Would shut the book and sit him down and die.]	33
FTLN 1557	'Tis not ten years gone	
FTLN 1558	Since Richard and Northumberland, great friends,	
FTLN 1559	Did feast together, and in two (years) after	
FTLN 1560	Were they at wars. It is but eight years since	60
FTLN 1561	This Percy was the man nearest my soul,	00
FTLN 1562	Who like a brother toiled in my affairs	
FTLN 1563	And laid his love and life under my foot,	
FTLN 1564	Yea, for my sake, even to the eyes of Richard	
FTLN 1565	Gave him defiance. But which of you was by—	65
FTLN 1566	To Warwick. You, cousin Nevil, as I may	
FTLN 1567	remember—	
FTLN 1568	When Richard, with his eye brimful of tears,	
FTLN 1569	Then checked and rated by Northumberland,	
FTLN 1570	Did speak these words, now proved a prophecy?	70
FTLN 1571	"Northumberland, thou ladder by the which	
FTLN 1572	My cousin Bolingbroke ascends my throne"—	
FTLN 1573	Though then, God knows, I had no such intent,	
FTLN 1574	But that necessity so bowed the state	
FTLN 1575	That I and greatness were compelled to kiss—	75
FTLN 1576	"The time shall come," thus did he follow it,	
FTLN 1577	"The time will come that foul sin, gathering head,	
FTLN 1578	Shall break into corruption"—so went on,	
FTLN 1579	Foretelling this same time's condition	
FTLN 1580	And the division of our amity.	80
	WARWICK	
FTLN 1581	There is a history in all men's lives	
FTLN 1582	Figuring the natures of the times deceased,	
FTLN 1583	The which observed, a man may prophesy,	
FTLN 1584	With a near aim, of the main chance of things	

ACT 3. SC. 1

FTLN 1585	As yet not come to life, who in their seeds	85
FTLN 1586	And weak beginning lie intreasurèd.	
FTLN 1587	Such things become the hatch and brood of time,	
FTLN 1588	And by the necessary form of this,	
FTLN 1589	King Richard might create a perfect guess	
FTLN 1590	That great Northumberland, then false to him,	90
FTLN 1591	Would of that seed grow to a greater falseness,	
FTLN 1592	Which should not find a ground to root upon	
FTLN 1593	Unless on you.	
FTLN 1594	KING Are these things then necessities?	
FTLN 1595	Then let us meet them like necessities.	95
FTLN 1596	And that same word even now cries out on us.	
FTLN 1597	They say the Bishop and Northumberland	
FTLN 1598	Are fifty thousand strong.	
FTLN 1599	WARWICK It cannot be, my lord.	
FTLN 1600	Rumor doth double, like the voice and echo,	100
FTLN 1601	The numbers of the feared. Please it your Grace	
FTLN 1602	To go to bed. Upon my soul, my lord,	
FTLN 1603	The powers that you already have sent forth	
FTLN 1604	Shall bring this prize in very easily.	
FTLN 1605	To comfort you the more, I have received	105
FTLN 1606	A certain instance that Glendower is dead.	
FTLN 1607	Your Majesty hath been this fortnight ill,	
FTLN 1608	And these unseasoned hours perforce must add	
FTLN 1609	Unto your sickness.	
FTLN 1610	KING I will take your counsel.	110
FTLN 1611	And were these inward wars once out of hand,	
FTLN 1612	We would, dear lords, unto the Holy Land.	
	They exit	

They exit.

(Scene 2) *Enter Justice Shallow and Justice Silence.*

FTLN 1613	SHALLOW Come on, come on. Give me your	
FTLN 1614	hand, sir, give me your hand, sir. An early stirrer, by	
FTLN 1615	the rood. And how doth my good cousin Silence?	
FTLN 1616	SILENCE Good morrow, good cousin Shallow.	
FTLN 1617	SHALLOW And how doth my cousin your bedfellow?	5
FTLN 1618	And your fairest daughter and mine, my goddaughter	
FTLN 1619	Ellen?	
FTLN 1620	SILENCE Alas, a black ousel, cousin Shallow.	
FTLN 1621	SHALLOW By yea and no, sir. I dare say my cousin	
FTLN 1622	William is become a good scholar. He is at Oxford	10
FTLN 1623	still, is he not?	
FTLN 1624	SILENCE Indeed, sir, to my cost.	
FTLN 1625	SHALLOW He must then to the Inns o' Court shortly. I	
FTLN 1626	was once of Clement's Inn, where I think they will	
FTLN 1627	talk of mad Shallow yet.	15
FTLN 1628	SILENCE You were called "Lusty Shallow" then,	
FTLN 1629	cousin.	
FTLN 1630	SHALLOW By the Mass, I was called anything, and I	
FTLN 1631	would have done anything indeed too, and roundly	
FTLN 1632	too. There was I, and little John Doit of Staffordshire,	20
FTLN 1633	and black George Barnes, and Francis Pickbone,	
FTLN 1634	and Will Squele, a Cotswold man. You had	
FTLN 1635	not four such swinge-bucklers in all the Inns o'	
FTLN 1636	Court again. And I may say to you, we knew where	
FTLN 1637	the bona robas were and had the best of them all at	25
FTLN 1638	commandment. Then was Jack Falstaff, now Sir	
FTLN 1639	John, a boy, and page to Thomas Mowbray, Duke of	
FTLN 1640	Norfolk.	
FTLN 1641	SILENCE This Sir John, cousin, that comes hither anon	
FTLN 1642	about soldiers?	30
FTLN 1643	SHALLOW The same Sir John, the very same. I see him	
FTLN 1644	break Scoggin's head at the court gate, when he	
FTLN 1645	was a crack not thus high; and the very same day did	

FTLN 1646	I fight with one Sampson Stockfish, a fruiterer,	
FTLN 1647	behind Grey's Inn. Jesu, Jesu, the mad days that I	35
FTLN 1648	have spent! And to see how many of my old acquaintance	
FTLN 1649	are dead.	
FTLN 1650	SILENCE We shall all follow, cousin.	
FTLN 1651	SHALLOW Certain, 'tis certain, very sure, very sure.	
FTLN 1652	Death, as the Psalmist saith, is certain to all. All	40
FTLN 1653	shall die. How a good yoke of bullocks at (Stamford)	
FTLN 1654	Fair?	
FTLN 1655	SILENCE By my troth, (cousin,) I was not there.	
FTLN 1656	SHALLOW Death is certain. Is old Dooble of your town	
FTLN 1657	living yet?	45
FTLN 1658	SILENCE Dead, sir.	
FTLN 1659	SHALLOW Jesu, Jesu, dead! He drew a good bow, and	
FTLN 1660	dead? He shot a fine shoot. John o' Gaunt loved him	
FTLN 1661	well, and betted much money on his head. Dead! He	
FTLN 1662	would have clapped i' th' clout at twelve score, and	50
FTLN 1663	carried you a forehand shaft a fourteen and fourteen	
FTLN 1664	and a half, that it would have done a man's	
FTLN 1665	heart good to see. How a score of ewes now?	
FTLN 1666	SILENCE Thereafter as they be, a score of good ewes	
FTLN 1667	may be worth ten pounds.	55
FTLN 1668	SHALLOW And is old Dooble dead?	
FTLN 1669	SILENCE Here come two of Sir John Falstaff's men, as I	
FTLN 1670	think.	
	Enter Bardolph and one with him.	
FTLN 1671	(SHALLOW) Good morrow, honest gentlemen.	
FTLN 1672	BARDOLPH I beseech you, which is Justice Shallow?	60
FTLN 1673	SHALLOW I am Robert Shallow, sir, a poor esquire of	
FTLN 1674	this county and one of the King's justices of the	
FTLN 1675	peace. What is your good pleasure with me?	
FTLN 1676	BARDOLPH My captain, sir, commends him to you, my	
FTLN 1677	captain, Sir John Falstaff, a tall gentleman, by	65
FTLN 1678	heaven, and a most gallant leader.	

FTLN 1679	SHALLOW He greets me well, sir. I knew him a good	
FTLN 1680	backsword man. How doth the good knight? May I	
FTLN 1681	ask how my lady his wife doth?	
FTLN 1682	BARDOLPH Sir, pardon. A soldier is better (accommodated)	70
FTLN 1683	than with a wife.	
FTLN 1684	SHALLOW It is well said, in faith, sir, and it is well said	
FTLN 1685	indeed too. "Better accommodated." It is good,	
FTLN 1686	yea, indeed is it. Good phrases are surely, and ever	
FTLN 1687	were, very commendable. "Accommodated." It	75
FTLN 1688	comes of accommodo. Very good, a good phrase.	
FTLN 1689	BARDOLPH Pardon, sir, I have heard the word—	
FTLN 1690	"phrase" call you it? By this day, I know not the	
FTLN 1691	phrase, but I will maintain the word with my sword	
FTLN 1692	to be a soldierlike word, and a word of exceeding	80
FTLN 1693	good command, by heaven. "Accommodated," that	
FTLN 1694	is when a man is, as they say, accommodated, or	
FTLN 1695	when a man is being whereby he may be thought to	
FTLN 1696	be accommodated, which is an excellent thing.	
	Γ of an Γ about C	
	Enter Falstaff.	
FTLN 1697	SHALLOW It is very just. Look, here comes good Sir	85
FTLN 1698	John.—Give me your good hand, give me your	
FTLN 1699	Worship's good hand. By my troth, you like well and	
FTLN 1700	bear your years very well. Welcome, good Sir John.	
FTLN 1701	FALSTAFF I am glad to see you well, good Master	
FTLN 1702	Robert Shallow.—Master (Sure-card,) as I think?	90
FTLN 1703	SHALLOW No, Sir John. It is my cousin Silence, in	
FTLN 1704	commission with me.	
FTLN 1705	FALSTAFF Good Master Silence, it well befits you	
FTLN 1706	should be of the peace.	
FTLN 1707	SILENCE Your good Worship is welcome.	95
FTLN 1708	FALSTAFF Fie, this is hot weather, gentlemen. Have you	
EEL N. 1700	provided me here half a dozen sufficient men?	
FTLN 1709		
FTLN 1709 FTLN 1710	SHALLOW Marry, have we, sir. Will you sit?	

FTLN 1711 FTLN 1712 FTLN 1713 FTLN 1714 FTLN 1715 FTLN 1716	FALSTAFF Let me see them, I beseech you. SHALLOW Where's the roll? Where's the roll? Where's the roll? Let me see, let me see, let me see. So, so, so, so, so, so, so, so. So, so. Yea, marry, sir.—Rafe Mouldy!— Let them appear as I call, let them do so, let them do so.	100
	「Enter Mouldy, followed by Shadow, Wart, Feeble, and Bullcalf.「	
FTLN 1717	Let me see, where is Mouldy?	105
FTLN 1718	MOULDY, <i>coming forward</i> Here, an it please you.	
FTLN 1719	SHALLOW What think you, Sir John? A good-limbed	
FTLN 1720	fellow, young, strong, and of good friends.	
FTLN 1721	FALSTAFF Is thy name Mouldy?	
FTLN 1722	MOULDY Yea, an 't please you.	110
FTLN 1723	FALSTAFF 'Tis the more time thou wert used.	
FTLN 1724	SHALLOW Ha, ha, ha, most excellent, i' faith! Things	
FTLN 1725	that are mouldy lack use. Very singular good, in	
FTLN 1726	faith. Well said, Sir John, very well said.	
FTLN 1727	(FALSTAFF Prick him.)	115
	Shallow marks the scroll.	
FTLN 1728	MOULDY I was pricked well enough before, an you	
FTLN 1729	could have let me alone. My old dame will be	
FTLN 1730	undone now for one to do her husbandry and her	
FTLN 1731	drudgery. You need not to have pricked me. There	
FTLN 1732	are other men fitter to go out than I.	120
FTLN 1733	FALSTAFF Go to. Peace, Mouldy. You shall go. Mouldy,	
FTLN 1734	it is time you were spent.	
FTLN 1735	MOULDY Spent?	
FTLN 1736	SHALLOW Peace, fellow, peace. Stand aside. Know you	
FTLN 1737	where you are?—For th' other, Sir John. Let me	125
FTLN 1738	see.—Simon Shadow!	
FTLN 1739	FALSTAFF Yea, marry, let me have him to sit under.	
FTLN 1740	He's like to be a cold soldier.	
FTLN 1741	SHALLOW Where's Shadow?	

FTLN 1742	SHADOW, <i>coming forward</i> Here, sir.	130
FTLN 1743	FALSTAFF Shadow, whose son art thou?	
FTLN 1744	SHADOW My mother's son, sir.	
FTLN 1745	FALSTAFF Thy mother's son! Like enough, and thy	
FTLN 1746	father's shadow. So the son of the female is the	
FTLN 1747	shadow of the male. It is often so, indeed, but much	135
FTLN 1748	of the father's substance.	
FTLN 1749	SHALLOW Do you like him, Sir John?	
FTLN 1750	FALSTAFF Shadow will serve for summer. Prick him,	
FTLN 1751	for we have a number of shadows (to) fill up the	
FTLN 1752	muster book.	140
FTLN 1753	SHALLOW Thomas Wart!	
FTLN 1754	FALSTAFF Where's he?	
FTLN 1755	WART, <i>coming forward</i> Here, sir.	
FTLN 1756	FALSTAFF Is thy name Wart?	
FTLN 1757	WART Yea, sir.	145
FTLN 1758	FALSTAFF Thou art a very ragged wart.	
FTLN 1759	SHALLOW Shall I prick him (down,) Sir John?	
FTLN 1760	FALSTAFF It were superfluous, for (his) apparel is built	
FTLN 1761	upon his back, and the whole frame stands upon	
FTLN 1762	pins. Prick him no more.	150
FTLN 1763	SHALLOW Ha, ha, ha. You can do it, sir, you can do it. I	
FTLN 1764	commend you well.—Francis Feeble!	
FTLN 1765	FEEBLE, <i>coming forward</i> Here, sir.	
FTLN 1766	SHALLOW What trade art thou, Feeble?	
FTLN 1767	FEEBLE A woman's tailor, sir.	155
FTLN 1768	SHALLOW Shall I prick him, sir?	
FTLN 1769	FALSTAFF You may, but if he had been a man's tailor,	
FTLN 1770	he'd ha' pricked you.—Wilt thou make as many	
FTLN 1771	holes in an enemy's battle as thou hast done in a	
FTLN 1772	woman's petticoat?	160
FTLN 1773	FEEBLE I will do my good will, sir. You can have no	
FTLN 1774	more.	
FTLN 1775	FALSTAFF Well said, good woman's tailor, well said,	
FTLN 1776	courageous Feeble. Thou wilt be as valiant as the	

FTLN 1777	wrathful dove or most magnanimous mouse.—	165
FTLN 1778	Prick the woman's tailor well, Master Shallow,	
FTLN 1779	deep, Master Shallow.	
FTLN 1780	FEEBLE I would Wart might have gone, sir.	
FTLN 1781	FALSTAFF I would thou wert a man's tailor, that thou	
FTLN 1782	mightst mend him and make him fit to go. I cannot	170
FTLN 1783	put him to a private soldier that is the leader of so	
FTLN 1784	many thousands. Let that suffice, most forcible	
FTLN 1785	Feeble.	
FTLN 1786	FEEBLE It shall suffice, sir.	
FTLN 1787	FALSTAFF I am bound to thee, reverend Feeble.—Who	175
FTLN 1788	is (the) next?	
FTLN 1789	SHALLOW Peter Bullcalf o' th' green.	
FTLN 1790	FALSTAFF Yea, marry, let's see Bullcalf.	
FTLN 1791	BULLCALF, <i>coming forward</i> Here, sir.	
FTLN 1792	FALSTAFF Fore God, a likely fellow. Come, prick (me)	180
FTLN 1793	Bullcalf till he roar again.	
FTLN 1794	BULLCALF O Lord, good my lord captain—	
FTLN 1795	FALSTAFF What, dost thou roar before thou art	
FTLN 1796	pricked?	
FTLN 1797	BULLCALF O Lord, sir, I am a diseased man.	185
FTLN 1798	FALSTAFF What disease hast thou?	
FTLN 1799	BULLCALF A whoreson cold, sir, a cough, sir, which I	
FTLN 1800	caught with ringing in the King's affairs upon his	
FTLN 1801	coronation day, sir.	
FTLN 1802	FALSTAFF Come, thou shalt go to the wars in a gown.	190
FTLN 1803	We will have away thy cold, and I will take such	
FTLN 1804	order that thy friends shall ring for thee.—Is here	
FTLN 1805	all?	
FTLN 1806	SHALLOW Here is two more called than your number.	
FTLN 1807	You must have but four here, sir, and so I pray you	195
FTLN 1808	go in with me to dinner.	
FTLN 1809	FALSTAFF Come, I will go drink with you, but I cannot	
FTLN 1810	tarry dinner. I am glad to see you, by my troth,	
FTLN 1811	Master Shallow.	

FTLN 1812 FTLN 1813	SHALLOW O, Sir John, do you remember since we lay all night in the windmill in Saint George's Field?	200
FTLN 1814	FALSTAFF No more of that, (good) Master Shallow, (no	
FTLN 1815	more of that.	
FTLN 1816	SHALLOW Ha, 'twas a merry night. And is Jane Nightwork	
FTLN 1817	alive?	205
FTLN 1818	FALSTAFF She lives, Master Shallow.	
FTLN 1819	SHALLOW She never could away with me.	
FTLN 1820	FALSTAFF Never, never. She would always say she could	
FTLN 1821	not abide Master Shallow.	
FTLN 1822	SHALLOW By the Mass, I could anger her to th' heart.	210
FTLN 1823	She was then a bona roba. Doth she hold her own	
FTLN 1824	well?	
FTLN 1825	FALSTAFF Old, old, Master Shallow.	
FTLN 1826	SHALLOW Nay, she must be old. She cannot choose but	
FTLN 1827	be old. Certain, she's old, and had Robin Nightwork	215
FTLN 1828	by old Nightwork before I came to Clement's Inn.	
FTLN 1829	SILENCE That's fifty-five year ago.	
FTLN 1830	SHALLOW Ha, cousin Silence, that thou hadst seen that	
FTLN 1831	that this knight and I have seen!—Ha, Sir John, said	
FTLN 1832	I well?	220
FTLN 1833	FALSTAFF We have heard the chimes at midnight, Master	
FTLN 1834	Shallow.	
FTLN 1835	SHALLOW That we have, that we have, that we have. In	
FTLN 1836	faith, Sir John, we have. Our watchword was "Hem,	
FTLN 1837	boys." Come, let's to dinner, come, let's to dinner.	225
FTLN 1838	Jesus, the days that we have seen! Come, come.	
	「Shallow, Silence, and Falstaff rise and exit.	
FTLN 1839	BULLCALF Good Master Corporate Bardolph, stand my	
FTLN 1840	friend, and here's four Harry ten-shillings in	
FTLN 1841	French crowns for you. <i>He gives Bardolph money.</i>	
FTLN 1842	In very truth, sir, I had as lief be hanged, sir, as go.	230
FTLN 1843	And yet, for mine own part, sir, I do not care, but	
FTLN 1844	rather because I am unwilling, and, for mine own	
FTLN 1845	part, have a desire to stay with my friends. Else, sir,	
FTLN 1846	I did not care, for mine own part, so much.	

FTLN 1847	BARDOLPH Go to. Stand aside.	235
FTLN 1848	MOULDY And, good Master Corporal Captain, for my	
FTLN 1849	old dame's sake, stand my friend. She has nobody to	
FTLN 1850	do anything about her when I am gone, and she is	
FTLN 1851	old and cannot help herself. You shall have forty,	
FTLN 1852	sir. The gives money.	240
FTLN 1853	BARDOLPH Go to. Stand aside.	
FTLN 1854	FEEBLE By my troth, I care not. A man can die but	
FTLN 1855	once. We owe God a death. I'll ne'er bear a base	
FTLN 1856	mind. An 't be my destiny, so; an 't be not, so. No	
FTLN 1857	man's too good to serve 's prince, and let it go	245
FTLN 1858	which way it will, he that dies this year is quit for	
FTLN 1859	the next.	
FTLN 1860	BARDOLPH Well said. Th' art a good fellow.	
FTLN 1861	FEEBLE Faith, I'll bear no base mind.	
	Enter Falstaff and the Justices.	
FTLN 1862	FALSTAFF Come, sir, which men shall I have?	250
FTLN 1862 FTLN 1863		250
	SHALLOW Four of which you please.	250
FTLN 1863	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, 「aside to Falstaff Sir, a word with you. I	250
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864	SHALLOW Four of which you please.	250
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864 FTLN 1865	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, <i>Taside to Falstaff</i> Sir, a word with you. I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bullcalf. FALSTAFF Go to, well.	250255
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864 FTLN 1865 FTLN 1866	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, <i>Taside to Falstaff</i> Sir, a word with you. I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bullcalf. FALSTAFF Go to, well.	
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864 FTLN 1865 FTLN 1866 FTLN 1867	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, 「aside to Falstaff Sir, a word with you. I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bullcalf. FALSTAFF Go to, well. SHALLOW Come, Sir John, which four will you have?	
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864 FTLN 1865 FTLN 1866 FTLN 1867 FTLN 1868	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, ** * a side to Falstaff** Sir, a word with you. I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bullcalf. FALSTAFF Go to, well. SHALLOW Come, Sir John, which four will you have? FALSTAFF Do you choose for me.	
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864 FTLN 1865 FTLN 1866 FTLN 1867 FTLN 1868 FTLN 1869	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, ** * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *	
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864 FTLN 1865 FTLN 1866 FTLN 1867 FTLN 1868 FTLN 1869 FTLN 1870	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, 「aside to Falstaff Sir, a word with you. I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bullcalf. FALSTAFF Go to, well. SHALLOW Come, Sir John, which four will you have? FALSTAFF Do you choose for me. SHALLOW Marry, then, Mouldy, Bullcalf, Feeble, and Shadow.	
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864 FTLN 1865 FTLN 1866 FTLN 1867 FTLN 1868 FTLN 1869 FTLN 1870 FTLN 1871	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, ** * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *	255
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864 FTLN 1865 FTLN 1866 FTLN 1867 FTLN 1868 FTLN 1869 FTLN 1870 FTLN 1871 FTLN 1872	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, 「aside to Falstaff Sir, a word with you. I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bullcalf. FALSTAFF Go to, well. SHALLOW Come, Sir John, which four will you have? FALSTAFF Do you choose for me. SHALLOW Marry, then, Mouldy, Bullcalf, Feeble, and Shadow. FALSTAFF Mouldy and Bullcalf! For you, Mouldy, stay at home till you are past service.—And for your	255
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864 FTLN 1865 FTLN 1866 FTLN 1867 FTLN 1868 FTLN 1869 FTLN 1870 FTLN 1871 FTLN 1872 FTLN 1873	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, 「aside to Falstaff Sir, a word with you. I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bullcalf. FALSTAFF Go to, well. SHALLOW Come, Sir John, which four will you have? FALSTAFF Do you choose for me. SHALLOW Marry, then, Mouldy, Bullcalf, Feeble, and Shadow. FALSTAFF Mouldy and Bullcalf! For you, Mouldy, stay at home till you are past service.—And for your part, Bullcalf, grow till you come unto it. I will	255
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864 FTLN 1865 FTLN 1866 FTLN 1867 FTLN 1868 FTLN 1869 FTLN 1870 FTLN 1871 FTLN 1872 FTLN 1873 FTLN 1873	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, 「aside to Falstaff Sir, a word with you. I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bullcalf. FALSTAFF Go to, well. SHALLOW Come, Sir John, which four will you have? FALSTAFF Do you choose for me. SHALLOW Marry, then, Mouldy, Bullcalf, Feeble, and Shadow. FALSTAFF Mouldy and Bullcalf! For you, Mouldy, stay at home till you are past service.—And for your part, Bullcalf, grow till you come unto it. I will none of you. 「Mouldy and Bullcalf exit."	255
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864 FTLN 1865 FTLN 1866 FTLN 1867 FTLN 1868 FTLN 1869 FTLN 1870 FTLN 1871 FTLN 1872 FTLN 1873 FTLN 1874 FTLN 1875	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, "aside to Falstaff" Sir, a word with you. I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bullcalf. FALSTAFF Go to, well. SHALLOW Come, Sir John, which four will you have? FALSTAFF Do you choose for me. SHALLOW Marry, then, Mouldy, Bullcalf, Feeble, and Shadow. FALSTAFF Mouldy and Bullcalf! For you, Mouldy, stay at home till you are past service.—And for your part, Bullcalf, grow till you come unto it. I will none of you. **Mouldy and Bullcalf exit.** SHALLOW Sir John, Sir John, do not yourself wrong.	255
FTLN 1863 FTLN 1864 FTLN 1865 FTLN 1866 FTLN 1867 FTLN 1868 FTLN 1869 FTLN 1870 FTLN 1871 FTLN 1872 FTLN 1873 FTLN 1874 FTLN 1875 FTLN 1876	SHALLOW Four of which you please. BARDOLPH, **aside to Falstaff** Sir, a word with you. I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bullcalf. FALSTAFF Go to, well. SHALLOW Come, Sir John, which four will you have? FALSTAFF Do you choose for me. SHALLOW Marry, then, Mouldy, Bullcalf, Feeble, and Shadow. FALSTAFF Mouldy and Bullcalf! For you, Mouldy, stay at home till you are past service.—And for your part, Bullcalf, grow till you come unto it. I will none of you. **Mouldy and Bullcalf exit.** SHALLOW Sir John, Sir John, do not yourself wrong. They are your likeliest men, and I would have you	255 260

FTLN 1880	stature, bulk and big assemblance of a man? Give	
FTLN 1881	me the spirit, Master Shallow. Here's Wart. You see	
FTLN 1882	what a ragged appearance it is. He shall charge you	270
FTLN 1883	and discharge you with the motion of a pewterer's	
FTLN 1884	hammer, come off and on swifter than he that	
FTLN 1885	gibbets on the brewer's bucket. And this same half-faced	
FTLN 1886	fellow, Shadow, give me this man. He presents	
FTLN 1887	no mark to the enemy. The foeman may with	275
FTLN 1888	as great aim level at the edge of a penknife. And for	
FTLN 1889	a retreat, how swiftly will this Feeble, the woman's	
FTLN 1890	tailor, run off! O, give me the spare men, and spare	
FTLN 1891	me the great ones.—Put me a caliver into Wart's	
FTLN 1892	hand, Bardolph.	280
FTLN 1893	BARDOLPH, <i>giving Wart a musket</i> Hold, Wart. Traverse.	
FTLN 1894	Thas, thas, thas.	
FTLN 1895	FALSTAFF, <i>to Wart</i> Come, manage me your caliver: so,	
FTLN 1896	very well, go to, very good, exceeding good. O, give	
FTLN 1897	me always a little, lean, old, chopped, bald shot.	285
FTLN 1898	Well said, i' faith, Wart. Th' art a good scab. Hold,	
FTLN 1899	there's a tester for thee.	
FTLN 1900	SHALLOW He is not his craft's master. He doth not do it	
FTLN 1901	right. I remember at Mile End Green, when I lay at	
FTLN 1902	Clement's Inn—I was then Sir Dagonet in Arthur's	290
FTLN 1903	show—there was a little quiver fellow, and he	
FTLN 1904	would manage you his piece thus. <i>Shallow performs</i>	
FTLN 1905	with the musket. And he would about and	
FTLN 1906	about, and come you in, and come you in. "Rah,	
FTLN 1907	tah, tah," would he say. "Bounce," would he say,	295
FTLN 1908	and away again would he go, and again would he	
FTLN 1909	come. I shall ne'er see such a fellow.	
FTLN 1910	FALSTAFF These fellows will do well, Master Shallow.	
FTLN 1911	—God keep you, Master Silence. I will not use	
FTLN 1912	many words with you. Fare you well, gentlemen	300
FTLN 1913	both. I thank you. I must a dozen mile tonight.—	
FTLN 1914	Bardolph, give the soldiers coats.	

FTLN 1915	SHALLOW Sir John, the Lord bless you. God prosper	
FTLN 1916	your affairs. God send us peace. At your return, visit	
FTLN 1917	our house. Let our old acquaintance be renewed.	305
FTLN 1918	Peradventure I will with you to the court.	
FTLN 1919	FALSTAFF Fore God, would you would, (Master	
FTLN 1920	Shallow.	
FTLN 1921	SHALLOW Go to. I have spoke at a word. God keep you.	
FTLN 1922	FALSTAFF Fare you well, gentle gentlemen.	310
	「Shallow and Silence」exit.	
FTLN 1923	On, Bardolph. Lead the men away.	
	「All but Falstaff exit.	
FTLN 1924	As I return, I will fetch off these justices. I do see	
FTLN 1925	the bottom of Justice Shallow. Lord, Lord, how	
FTLN 1926	subject we old men are to this vice of lying. This	
FTLN 1927	same starved justice hath done nothing but prate to	315
FTLN 1928	me of the wildness of his youth and the feats he hath	
FTLN 1929	done about Turnbull Street, and every third word a	
FTLN 1930	lie, duer paid to the hearer than the Turk's tribute. I	
FTLN 1931	do remember him at Clement's Inn, like a man	
FTLN 1932	made after supper of a cheese paring. When he was	320
FTLN 1933	naked, he was, for all the world, like a forked radish	
FTLN 1934	with a head fantastically carved upon it with a	
FTLN 1935	knife. He was so forlorn that his dimensions to	
FTLN 1936	any thick sight were invincible. He was the very	
FTLN 1937	genius of famine, [yet lecherous as a monkey,	325
FTLN 1938	and the whores called him "mandrake."] He came	
FTLN 1939	(ever) in the rearward of the fashion, [and sung	
FTLN 1940	those tunes to the overscutched huswives that he	
FTLN 1941	heard the carmen whistle, and swore they were his	
FTLN 1942	fancies or his good-nights.] And now is this Vice's	330
FTLN 1943	dagger become a squire, and talks as familiarly	
FTLN 1944	of John o' Gaunt as if he had been sworn brother	
FTLN 1945	to him, and I'll be sworn he ne'er saw him but	
FTLN 1946	once in the tilt-yard, and then he burst his head	
FTLN 1947	for crowding among the Marshal's men. I saw it	335
FTLN 1948	and told John o' Gaunt he beat his own name, for	
	· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	

FTLN 1949	you might have thrust him and all his apparel into	
FTLN 1950	an eel-skin; the case of a treble hautboy was a	
FTLN 1951	mansion for him, a court. And now has he land and	
FTLN 1952	beefs. Well, I'll be acquainted with him if I return,	340
FTLN 1953	and 't shall go hard but I'll make him a philosopher's	
FTLN 1954	two stones to me. If the young dace be a	
FTLN 1955	bait for the old pike, I see no reason in the law of	
FTLN 1956	nature but I may snap at him. Let time shape, and	
FTLN 1957	there an end.	345
	THe exits.	

⟨Scene 1⟩

Enter the Archbishop of York, Mowbray, Lord Bardolph, Hastings, and their officers within the Forest of Gaultree.

FTLN 1958	ARCHBISHOP What is this forest called?	
	HASTINGS	
FTLN 1959	'Tis Gaultree Forest, an 't shall please your Grace.	
	ARCHBISHOP	
FTLN 1960	Here stand, my lords, and send discoverers forth	
FTLN 1961	To know the numbers of our enemies.	
	HASTINGS	
FTLN 1962	We have sent forth already.	5
FTLN 1963	ARCHBISHOP 'Tis well done.	
FTLN 1964	My friends and brethren in these great affairs,	
FTLN 1965	I must acquaint you that I have received	
FTLN 1966	New-dated letters from Northumberland,	
FTLN 1967	Their cold intent, tenor, and substance, thus:	10
FTLN 1968	Here doth he wish his person, with such powers	
FTLN 1969	As might hold sortance with his quality,	
FTLN 1970	The which he could not levy; whereupon	
FTLN 1971	He is retired, to ripe his growing fortunes,	
FTLN 1972	To Scotland, and concludes in hearty prayers	15
FTLN 1973	That your attempts may overlive the hazard	
FTLN 1974	And fearful meeting of their opposite.	
	MOWBRAY	
FTLN 1975	Thus do the hopes we have in him touch ground	
FTLN 1976	And dash themselves to pieces.	

Enter Messenger.

FTLN 1977	HASTINGS	Now, what news?	20
	MESSENGER		
FTLN 1978	West of this forest, s	carcely off a mile,	
FTLN 1979	In goodly form come	es on the enemy,	
FTLN 1980	And, by the ground t	hey hide, I judge their number	
FTLN 1981	Upon or near the rate	e of thirty thousand.	
	MOWBRAY		
FTLN 1982	The just proportion t	hat we gave them out.	25
FTLN 1983	Let us sway on and f	face them in the field.	
	En	ter Westmoreland.	
	ARCHBISHOP		
FTLN 1984	What well-appointed	l leader fronts us here?	
	MOWBRAY		
FTLN 1985	I think it is my Lord	of Westmoreland.	
	WESTMORELAND		
FTLN 1986	Health and fair greet	ing from our general,	
FTLN 1987	The Prince Lord Joh	n and Duke of Lancaster.	30
	ARCHBISHOP		
FTLN 1988	Say on, my Lord of	Westmoreland, in peace,	
FTLN 1989	What doth concern y	our coming.	
FTLN 1990	WESTMORELAND	Then, my lord,	
FTLN 1991	Unto your Grace do	I in chief address	
FTLN 1992	The substance of my	speech. If that rebellion	35
FTLN 1993	Came like itself, in b	ase and abject routs,	
FTLN 1994	Led on by bloody yo	outh, guarded with rage,	
FTLN 1995	And countenanced b	y boys and beggary—	
FTLN 1996	I say, if damned com	motion so [appeared]	
FTLN 1997	In his true, native, ar	nd most proper shape,	40
FTLN 1998	You, reverend father	, and these noble lords	
FTLN 1999	Had not been here to	dress the ugly form	
FTLN 2000	Of base and bloody is	nsurrection	
FTLN 2001	With your fair honor	s. You, Lord Archbishop,	

FTLN 2002	Whose see is by a civil peace maintained,	45
FTLN 2003	Whose beard the silver hand of peace hath touched,	
FTLN 2004	Whose learning and good letters peace hath tutored,	
FTLN 2005	Whose white investments figure innocence,	
FTLN 2006	The dove and very blessèd spirit of peace,	
FTLN 2007	Wherefore do you so ill translate yourself	50
FTLN 2008	Out of the speech of peace, that bears such grace,	
FTLN 2009	Into the harsh and boist'rous tongue of war,	
FTLN 2010	Turning your books to graves, your ink to blood,	
FTLN 2011	Your pens to lances, and your tongue divine	
FTLN 2012	To a loud trumpet and a point of war?	55
	ARCHBISHOP	
FTLN 2013	Wherefore do I this? So the question stands.	
FTLN 2014	Briefly, to this end: we are all diseased	
FTLN 2015	And with our surfeiting and wanton hours	
FTLN 2016	Have brought ourselves into a burning fever,	
FTLN 2017	And we must bleed for it; of which disease	60
FTLN 2018	Our late King Richard, being infected, died.	
FTLN 2019	But, my most noble Lord of Westmoreland,	
FTLN 2020	I take not on me here as a physician,	
FTLN 2021	Nor do I as an enemy to peace	
FTLN 2022	Troop in the throngs of military men,	65
FTLN 2023	But rather show awhile like fearful war	
FTLN 2024	To diet rank minds sick of happiness	
FTLN 2025	And purge th' obstructions which begin to stop	
FTLN 2026	Our very veins of life. Hear me more plainly.	
FTLN 2027	I have in equal balance justly weighed	70
FTLN 2028	What wrongs our arms may do, what wrongs we	
FTLN 2029	suffer,	
FTLN 2030	And find our griefs heavier than our offenses.	
FTLN 2031	We see which way the stream of time doth run	
FTLN 2032	And are enforced from our most quiet there	75
FTLN 2033	By the rough torrent of occasion,	
FTLN 2034	And have the summary of all our griefs,	
FTLN 2035	When time shall serve, to show in articles;	

FTLN 2036	Which long ere this we offered to the King	
FTLN 2037	And might by no suit gain our audience.	80
FTLN 2038	When we are wronged and would unfold our griefs,	
FTLN 2039	We are denied access unto his person	
FTLN 2040	Even by those men that most have done us wrong.	
FTLN 2041	The dangers of the days but newly gone,	
FTLN 2042	Whose memory is written on the earth	85
FTLN 2043	With yet-appearing blood, and the examples	
FTLN 2044	Of every minute's instance, present now,	
FTLN 2045	Hath put us in these ill-beseeming arms,	
FTLN 2046	Not to break peace or any branch of it,	
FTLN 2047	But to establish here a peace indeed,	90
FTLN 2048	Concurring both in name and quality.	
	WESTMORELAND	
FTLN 2049	Whenever yet was your appeal denied?	
FTLN 2050	Wherein have you been gallèd by the King?	
FTLN 2051	What peer hath been suborned to grate on you,	
FTLN 2052	That you should seal this lawless bloody book	95
FTLN 2053	Of forged rebellion with a seal divine	
FTLN 2054	[And consecrate commotion's bitter edge?]	
	ARCHBISHOP	
FTLN 2055	My brother general, the commonwealth,	
FTLN 2056	[To brother born an household cruelty,]	
FTLN 2057	I make my quarrel in particular.	100
	WESTMORELAND	
FTLN 2058	There is no need of any such redress,	
FTLN 2059	Or if there were, it not belongs to you.	
	MOWBRAY	
FTLN 2060	Why not to him in part, and to us all	
FTLN 2061	That feel the bruises of the days before	
FTLN 2062	And suffer the condition of these times	105
FTLN 2063	To lay a heavy and unequal hand	
FTLN 2064	Upon our honors?	
FTLN 2065	WESTMORELAND (O, my good Lord Mowbray,	
FTLN 2066	Construe the times to their necessities,	

ETI N 2077	And you shall say indeed it is the time	110
FTLN 2067 FTLN 2068	And you shall say indeed it is the time, And not the King, that doth you injuries.	110
FTLN 2069	Yet for your part, it not appears to me	
FTLN 2070	Either from the King or in the present time	
FTLN 2071	That you should have an inch of any ground	115
FTLN 2072	To build a grief on. Were you not restored	113
FTLN 2073	To all the Duke of Norfolk's seigniories,	
FTLN 2074	Your noble and right well remembered father's? MOWBRAY	
FTLN 2075		
FTLN 2075	What thing, in honor, had my father lost That need to be revived and breathed in me?	
FTLN 2070 FTLN 2077	The King that loved him, as the state stood then,	120
FTLN 2077 FTLN 2078	Was force perforce compelled to banish him,	120
	And then that Henry Bolingbroke and he,	
FTLN 2079	Being mounted and both roused in their seats,	
FTLN 2080	Their neighing coursers daring of the spur,	
FTLN 2081		125
FTLN 2082	Their armèd staves in charge, their beavers down, Their eyes of fire sparkling through sights of steel,	123
FTLN 2083 FTLN 2084	And the loud trumpet blowing them together,	
FTLN 2084 FTLN 2085	Then, then, when there was nothing could have	
FTLN 2086	stayed	
FTLN 2087	My father from the breast of Bolingbroke,	130
FTLN 2088	O, when the King did throw his warder down—	150
FTLN 2089	His own life hung upon the staff he threw—	
FTLN 2090	Then threw he down himself and all their lives	
FTLN 2091	That by indictment and by dint of sword	
FTLN 2092	Have since miscarried under Bolingbroke.	135
112112072	WESTMORELAND	155
FTLN 2093	You speak, Lord Mowbray, now you know not what.	
FTLN 2094	The Earl of Hereford was reputed then	
FTLN 2095	In England the most valiant gentleman.	
FTLN 2096	Who knows on whom fortune would then have	
FTLN 2097	smiled?	140
FTLN 2098	But if your father had been victor there,	•
FTLN 2099	He ne'er had borne it out of Coventry;	

FTLN 2100	For all the country in a general voice	
FTLN 2101	Cried hate upon him; and all their prayers and	
FTLN 2102	love	145
FTLN 2103	Were set on Hereford, whom they doted on	
FTLN 2104	And blessed and graced, [indeed] more than the	
FTLN 2105	King.	
FTLN 2106	But this is mere digression from my purpose.	
FTLN 2107	Here come I from our princely general	150
FTLN 2108	To know your griefs, to tell you from his Grace	
FTLN 2109	That he will give you audience; and wherein	
FTLN 2110	It shall appear that your demands are just,	
FTLN 2111	You shall enjoy them, everything set off	
FTLN 2112	That might so much as think you enemies.	155
	MOWBRAY	
FTLN 2113	But he hath forced us to compel this offer,	
FTLN 2114	And it proceeds from policy, not love.	
	WESTMORELAND	
FTLN 2115	Mowbray, you overween to take it so.	
FTLN 2116	This offer comes from mercy, not from fear.	
FTLN 2117	For, lo, within a ken our army lies,	160
FTLN 2118	Upon mine honor, all too confident	
FTLN 2119	To give admittance to a thought of fear.	
FTLN 2120	Our battle is more full of names than yours,	
FTLN 2121	Our men more perfect in the use of arms,	
FTLN 2122	Our armor all as strong, our cause the best.	165
FTLN 2123	Then reason will our hearts should be as good.	
FTLN 2124	Say you not then our offer is compelled.	
	MOWBRAY	
FTLN 2125	Well, by my will, we shall admit no parley.	
	WESTMORELAND	
FTLN 2126	That argues but the shame of your offense.	
FTLN 2127	A rotten case abides no handling.	170
	HASTINGS	
FTLN 2128	Hath the Prince John a full commission,	
FTLN 2129	In very ample virtue of his father,	

FTLN 2130	To hear and absolutely to determine	
FTLN 2131	Of what conditions we shall stand upon?	
	WESTMORELAND	
FTLN 2132	That is intended in the General's name.	175
FTLN 2133	I muse you make so slight a question.	
	ARCHBISHOP, <i>giving Westmoreland a paper</i>	
FTLN 2134	Then take, my Lord of Westmoreland, this schedule,	
FTLN 2135	For this contains our general grievances.	
FTLN 2136	Each several article herein redressed,	
FTLN 2137	All members of our cause, both here and hence	180
FTLN 2138	That are insinewed to this action,	
FTLN 2139	Acquitted by a true substantial form	
FTLN 2140	And present execution of our wills	
FTLN 2141	To us and (to) our purposes confined,	
FTLN 2142	We come within our awful banks again	185
FTLN 2143	And knit our powers to the arm of peace.	
	WESTMORELAND	
FTLN 2144	This will I show the General. Please you, lords,	
FTLN 2145	In sight of both our battles we may meet,	
FTLN 2146	And either end in peace, which God so frame,	
FTLN 2147	Or to the place of difference call the swords	190
FTLN 2148	Which must decide it.	
FTLN 2149	ARCHBISHOP My lord, we will do so.	
	Westmoreland exits.	
	MOWBRAY	
FTLN 2150	There is a thing within my bosom tells me	
FTLN 2151	That no conditions of our peace can stand.	
	HASTINGS	
FTLN 2152	Fear you not that. If we can make our peace	195
FTLN 2153	Upon such large terms and so absolute	_
FTLN 2154	As our conditions shall consist upon,	
FTLN 2155	Our peace shall stand as firm as rocky mountains.	
	MOWBRAY	
FTLN 2156	Yea, but our valuation shall be such	200
FTLN 2157	That every slight and false-derived cause,	200

FTLN 2158	Yea, every idle, nice, and wanton reason,	
FTLN 2159	Shall to the King taste of this action,	
FTLN 2160	That, were our royal faiths martyrs in love,	
FTLN 2161	We shall be winnowed with so rough a wind	
FTLN 2162	That even our corn shall seem as light as chaff,	205
FTLN 2163	And good from bad find no partition.	
	ARCHBISHOP	
FTLN 2164	No, no, my lord. Note this: the King is weary	
FTLN 2165	Of dainty and such picking grievances,	
FTLN 2166	For he hath found to end one doubt by death	
FTLN 2167	Revives two greater in the heirs of life;	210
FTLN 2168	And therefore will he wipe his tables clean	
FTLN 2169	And keep no telltale to his memory	
FTLN 2170	That may repeat and history his loss	
FTLN 2171	To new remembrance. For full well he knows	
FTLN 2172	He cannot so precisely weed this land	215
FTLN 2173	As his misdoubts present occasion;	
FTLN 2174	His foes are so enrooted with his friends	
FTLN 2175	That, plucking to unfix an enemy,	
FTLN 2176	He doth unfasten so and shake a friend;	
FTLN 2177	So that this land, like an offensive wife	220
FTLN 2178	That hath enraged him on to offer strokes,	
FTLN 2179	As he is striking holds his infant up	
FTLN 2180	And hangs resolved correction in the arm	
FTLN 2181	That was upreared to execution.	
	HASTINGS	
FTLN 2182	Besides, the King hath wasted all his rods	225
FTLN 2183	On late offenders, that he now doth lack	
FTLN 2184	The very instruments of chastisement,	
FTLN 2185	So that his power, like to a fangless lion,	
FTLN 2186	May offer but not hold.	
FTLN 2187	ARCHBISHOP 'Tis very true,	230
FTLN 2188	And therefore be assured, my good Lord Marshal,	
FTLN 2189	If we do now make our atonement well,	
FTLN 2190	Our peace will, like a broken limb united,	
FTLN 2191	Grow stronger for the breaking.	

ĺ		
	157 <i>Henry IV, Part 2</i> ACT 4. SC. 1	
FTLN 2192 FTLN 2193	MOWBRAY Be it so. Here is returned my Lord of Westmoreland.	235
	Enter Westmoreland.	
FTLN 2194 FTLN 2195	WESTMORELAND, <i>to the Archbishop</i> The Prince is here at hand. Pleaseth your Lordship To meet his Grace just distance 'tween our armies.	
	Enter Prince John and his army.	
	MOWBRAY, to the Archbishop	
FTLN 2196	Your Grace of York, in God's name then set	
FTLN 2197	forward.	240
	ARCHBISHOP	
FTLN 2198	Before, and greet his Grace.—My lord, we come. *[All move forward.]	
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 2199	You are well encountered here, my cousin	
FTLN 2200	Mowbray.—	
FTLN 2201	Good day to you, gentle Lord Archbishop,—	
FTLN 2202	And so to you, Lord Hastings, and to all.—	245
FTLN 2203	My Lord of York, it better showed with you	
FTLN 2204	When that your flock, assembled by the bell,	
FTLN 2205	Encircled you to hear with reverence	
FTLN 2206	Your exposition on the holy text	
FTLN 2207	,	250
FTLN 2208	Cheering a rout of rebels with your drum,	
FTLN 2209	Turning the word to sword, and life to death.	
FTLN 2210	That man that sits within a monarch's heart	
FTLN 2211	And ripens in the sunshine of his favor,	
FTLN 2212	Θ,	255
FTLN 2213	Alack, what mischiefs might he set abroach	
FTLN 2214	In shadow of such greatness! With you, Lord	

Bishop,

It is even so. Who hath not heard it spoken

How deep you were within the books of God,

260

FTLN 2215

FTLN 2216

FTLN 2217

FTLN 2218	To us the speaker in His parliament,	
FTLN 2219	To us th' 'imagined' voice of God Himself,	
FTLN 2220	The very opener and intelligencer	
FTLN 2221	Between the grace, the sanctities, of heaven,	
FTLN 2222	And our dull workings? O, who shall believe	265
FTLN 2223	But you misuse the reverence of your place,	
FTLN 2224	(Employ) the countenance and grace of heaven	
FTLN 2225	As a false favorite doth his prince's name,	
FTLN 2226	In deeds dishonorable? You have ta'en up,	
FTLN 2227	Under the counterfeited zeal of God,	270
FTLN 2228	The subjects of His substitute, my father,	
FTLN 2229	And both against the peace of heaven and him	
FTLN 2230	Have here up-swarmed them.	
FTLN 2231	ARCHBISHOP Good my Lord of	
FTLN 2232	Lancaster,	275
FTLN 2233	I am not here against your father's peace,	
FTLN 2234	But, as I told my Lord of Westmoreland,	
FTLN 2235	The time misordered doth, in common sense,	
FTLN 2236	Crowd us and crush us to this monstrous form	
FTLN 2237	To hold our safety up. I sent your Grace	280
FTLN 2238	The parcels and particulars of our grief,	
FTLN 2239	The which hath been with scorn shoved from the	
FTLN 2240	court,	
FTLN 2241	Whereon this Hydra son of war is born,	
FTLN 2242	Whose dangerous eyes may well be charmed asleep	285
FTLN 2243	With grant of our most just and right desires,	
FTLN 2244	And true obedience, of this madness cured,	
FTLN 2245	Stoop tamely to the foot of majesty.	
	MOWBRAY	
FTLN 2246	If not, we ready are to try our fortunes	
FTLN 2247	To the last man.	290
FTLN 2248	HASTINGS And though we here fall down,	
FTLN 2249	We have supplies to second our attempt;	
FTLN 2250	If they miscarry, theirs shall second them,	
FTLN 2251	And so success of mischief shall be born,	

Henry IV, Part 2

1		1
	-	
	1	

FTLN 2252	And heir from heir shall hold his quarrel up	295
FTLN 2253	Whiles England shall have generation.	
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 2254	You are too shallow, Hastings, much too shallow	
FTLN 2255	To sound the bottom of the after-times.	
	WESTMORELAND	
FTLN 2256	Pleaseth your Grace to answer them directly	
FTLN 2257	How far forth you do like their articles.	300
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 2258	I like them all, and do allow them well,	
FTLN 2259	And swear here by the honor of my blood	
FTLN 2260	My father's purposes have been mistook,	
FTLN 2261	And some about him have too lavishly	
FTLN 2262	Wrested his meaning and authority.	305
FTLN 2263	To the Archbishop. My lord, these griefs shall be	
FTLN 2264	with speed redressed;	
FTLN 2265	Upon my soul, they shall. If this may please you,	
FTLN 2266	Discharge your powers unto their several counties,	
FTLN 2267	As we will ours, and here, between the armies,	310
FTLN 2268	Let's drink together friendly and embrace,	
FTLN 2269	That all their eyes may bear those tokens home	
FTLN 2270	Of our restorèd love and amity.	
	ARCHBISHOP	
FTLN 2271	I take your princely word for these redresses.	
	〈JOHN OF LANCASTER〉	
FTLN 2272	I give it you, and will maintain my word,	315
FTLN 2273	And thereupon I drink unto your Grace.	
	The Leaders of both armies begin to drink together.	
	(HASTINGS,) [to an Officer]	
FTLN 2274	Go, captain, and deliver to the army	
FTLN 2275	This news of peace. Let them have pay, and part.	
FTLN 2276	I know it will well please them. Hie thee, captain.	
	「Officer [¬] ⟨exits.⟩	
	ARCHBISHOP, \[\text{toasting Westmoreland} \]	
FTLN 2277	To you, my noble Lord of Westmoreland.	320
	WESTMORELAND, <i>returning the toast</i>	
	_	

ACT	4.	SC.	1

FTLN 2278 FTLN 2279 FTLN 2280 FTLN 2281	I pledge your Grace, and if you knew what pains I have bestowed to breed this present peace, You would drink freely. But my love to you Shall show itself more openly hereafter. ARCHBISHOP	
FTLN 2282	I do not doubt you.	325
FTLN 2283	WESTMORELAND I am glad of it.—	323
FTLN 2284	Health to my lord and gentle cousin, Mowbray.	
	MOWBRAY	
FTLN 2285	You wish me health in very happy season,	
FTLN 2286	For I am on the sudden something ill.	
	ARCHBISHOP	
FTLN 2287	Against ill chances men are ever merry,	330
FTLN 2288	But heaviness foreruns the good event.	
	WESTMORELAND	
FTLN 2289	Therefore be merry, coz, since sudden sorrow	
FTLN 2290	Serves to say thus: "Some good thing comes	
FTLN 2291	tomorrow."	
	ARCHBISHOP	
FTLN 2292	Believe me, I am passing light in spirit.	335
	MOWBRAY	
FTLN 2293	So much the worse if your own rule be true.	
	Shout within.	
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 2294	The word of peace is rendered. Hark how they	
FTLN 2295	shout.	
	MOWBRAY This had been about 1 often seistants	
FTLN 2296	This had been cheerful after victory.	
ETI N 2207	ARCHBISHOP	240
FTLN 2297 FTLN 2298	A peace is of the nature of a conquest,	340
FTLN 2298 FTLN 2299	For then both parties nobly are subdued, And neither party loser.	
FTLN 2300	JOHN OF LANCASTER, <i>to Westmoreland</i> Go, my lord,	
FTLN 2300	And let our army be discharged too.	
1.1171/ 7201	Westmoreland (exits.)	

I		
	165 <i>Henry IV, Part 2</i> ACT 4. SC. 1	
FTLN 2302	To the Archbishop. And, good my lord, so please	345
FTLN 2303	you, let our trains	343
FTLN 2304	March by us, that we may peruse the men	
FTLN 2305	We should have coped withal.	
FTLN 2306	ARCHBISHOP Go, good Lord	
FTLN 2307	Hastings,	350
FTLN 2308	And ere they be dismissed, let them march by.	
	[Hastings] (exits.)	
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 2309	I trust, lords, we shall lie tonight together.	
	Enter Westmoreland.	
FTLN 2310	Now, cousin, wherefore stands our army still?	
	WESTMORELAND	
FTLN 2311	The leaders, having charge from you to stand,	2.7.7
FTLN 2312	Will not go off until they hear you speak.	355
FTLN 2313	JOHN OF LANCASTER They know their duties.	
	Enter Hastings.	
	HASTINGS, \[\text{to the Archbishop} \]	
FTLN 2314	My lord, our army is dispersed already.	
FTLN 2315	Like youthful steers unyoked, they take their	
FTLN 2316	courses	
FTLN 2317	East, west, north, south, or, like a school broke up,	360
FTLN 2318	Each hurries toward his home and sporting-place.	
	WESTMORELAND	
FTLN 2319	Good tidings, my Lord Hastings, for the which	
FTLN 2320	I do arrest thee, traitor, of high treason.—	
FTLN 2321	And you, Lord Archbishop, and you, Lord Mowbray,	265
FTLN 2322	Of capital treason I attach you both. MOWBRAY	365
FTLN 2323	Is this proceeding just and honorable?	
FTLN 2324	WESTMORELAND Is your assembly so?	
l	A DCHDIGHOD	

ARCHBISHOP

FTLN 2325

Will you thus break your faith?

ACT	1	SC	,
ACI	4.	SC.	4

FTLN 2326	JOHN OF LANCASTER I pawned thee none.	
FTLN 2327	I promised you redress of these same grievances	370
FTLN 2328	Whereof you did complain, which, by mine honor,	
FTLN 2329	I will perform with a most Christian care.	
FTLN 2330	But for you rebels, look to taste the due	
FTLN 2331	Meet for rebellion (and such acts as yours.)	
FTLN 2332	Most shallowly did you these arms commence,	375
FTLN 2333	Fondly brought here, and foolishly sent hence.—	
FTLN 2334	Strike up our drums; pursue the scattered stray.	
FTLN 2335	God, and not we, hath safely fought today.—	
FTLN 2336	Some guard (these traitors) to the block of death,	
FTLN 2337	Treason's true bed and yielder-up of breath.	380
	$\langle They\ exit. \rangle$	
	Scene 2	
	Alarum. Excursions. Enter Falstaff \langle and Colevile. \rangle	
FTLN 2338	FALSTAFF What's your name, sir? Of what condition are	
FTLN 2339	you, and of what place, (I pray)?	
FTLN 2340	COLEVILE I am a knight, sir, and my name is Colevile of	
FTLN 2341	the Dale.	
FTLN 2342	FALSTAFF Well then, Colevile is your name, a knight is	5
FTLN 2343	your degree, and your place the Dale. Colevile shall	
FTLN 2344	be still your name, a traitor your degree, and the	
FTLN 2345	dungeon your place, a place deep enough so shall	
FTLN 2346	you be still Colevile of the Dale.	
FTLN 2347	COLEVILE Are not you Sir John Falstaff?	10
FTLN 2348	FALSTAFF As good a man as he, sir, whoe'er I am. Do	
FTLN 2349	you yield, sir, or shall I sweat for you? If I do sweat,	
FTLN 2350	they are the drops of thy lovers and they weep for	
FTLN 2351	thy death. Therefore rouse up fear and trembling,	
FTLN 2352	and do observance to my mercy.	15
FTLN 2353	COLEVILE I think you are Sir John Falstaff, and in that	
FTLN 2354	thought yield me.	

FTLN 2355	FALSTAFF I have a whole school of tongues in this belly	
FTLN 2356	of mine, and not a tongue of them all speaks any	
FTLN 2357	other word but my name. An I had but a belly of any	20
FTLN 2358	indifferency, I were simply the most active fellow in	
FTLN 2359	Europe. My womb, my womb, my womb undoes	
FTLN 2360	me. Here comes our general.	
	Enter John, Westmoreland, and the rest.	
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 2361	The heat is past. Follow no further now.	
FTLN 2362	Call in the powers, good cousin Westmoreland.	25
	Westmoreland exits. Retreat is sounded.	
FTLN 2363	Now, Falstaff, where have you been all this while?	
FTLN 2364	When everything is ended, then you come.	
FTLN 2365	These tardy tricks of yours will, on my life,	
FTLN 2366	One time or other break some gallows' back.	
FTLN 2367	FALSTAFF I would be sorry, my lord, but it should be	30
FTLN 2368	thus. I never knew yet but rebuke and check was the	
FTLN 2369	reward of valor. Do you think me a swallow, an	
FTLN 2370	arrow, or a bullet? Have I in my poor and old	
FTLN 2371	motion the expedition of thought? I have speeded	
FTLN 2372	hither with the very extremest inch of possibility. I	35
FTLN 2373	have foundered ninescore and odd posts, and here,	
FTLN 2374	travel-tainted as I am, have in my pure and immaculate	
FTLN 2375	valor taken Sir John Colevile of the Dale, a most	
FTLN 2376	furious knight and valorous enemy. But what of	
FTLN 2377	that? He saw me and yielded, that I may justly say,	40
FTLN 2378	with the hook-nosed fellow of Rome, "There, cousin,	
FTLN 2379	I came, saw, and overcame."	
FTLN 2380	JOHN OF LANCASTER It was more of his courtesy than	
FTLN 2381	your deserving.	
FTLN 2382	FALSTAFF I know not. Here he is, and here I yield him.	45
FTLN 2383	And I beseech your Grace let it be booked with the	
FTLN 2384	rest of this day's deeds, or, by the Lord, I will have it	
FTLN 2385	in a particular ballad else, with mine own picture	
FTLN 2386	on the top on 't, Colevile kissing my foot; to the	

FTLN 2387	which course if I be enforced, if you do not all show	50
FTLN 2388	like gilt twopences to me, and I in the clear sky of	
FTLN 2389	fame o'ershine you as much as the full moon doth	
FTLN 2390	the cinders of the element (which show like pins'	
FTLN 2391	heads to her), believe not the word of the noble.	
FTLN 2392	Therefore let me have right, and let desert mount.	55
FTLN 2393	JOHN OF LANCASTER Thine's too heavy to mount.	
FTLN 2394	FALSTAFF Let it shine, then.	
FTLN 2395	JOHN OF LANCASTER Thine's too thick to shine.	
FTLN 2396	FALSTAFF Let it do something, my good lord, that may	
FTLN 2397	do me good, and call it what you will.	60
FTLN 2398	JOHN OF LANCASTER Is thy name Colevile?	
FTLN 2399	COLEVILE It is, my lord.	
FTLN 2400	JOHN OF LANCASTER A famous rebel art thou,	
FTLN 2401	Colevile.	
FTLN 2402	FALSTAFF And a famous true subject took him.	65
	COLEVILE	
FTLN 2403	I am, my lord, but as my betters are	
FTLN 2404	That led me hither. Had they been ruled by me,	
FTLN 2405	You should have won them dearer than you have.	
FTLN 2406	FALSTAFF I know not how they sold themselves, but	
FTLN 2407	thou, like a kind fellow, gavest thyself away gratis,	70
FTLN 2408	and I thank thee for thee.	
	Enter Westmoreland.	
	Enter Westmoretana.	
FTLN 2409	JOHN OF LANCASTER Now, have you left pursuit?	
	WESTMORELAND	
FTLN 2410	Retreat is made and execution stayed.	
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 2411	Send Colevile with his confederates	
FTLN 2412	To York, to present execution.—	75
FTLN 2413	Blunt, lead him hence, and see you guard him sure.	
	Blunt (exits with Colevile.)	
FTLN 2414	And now dispatch we toward the court, my lords.	
FTLN 2415	I hear the King my father is sore sick.	

FTLN 2416	Our news shall go before us to his Majesty,	
FTLN 2417	<i>To Westmoreland</i> . Which, cousin, you shall bear	80
FTLN 2418	to comfort him,	
FTLN 2419	And we with sober speed will follow you.	
FTLN 2420	FALSTAFF My lord, I beseech you give me leave to go	
FTLN 2421	through Gloucestershire, and, when you come to	
FTLN 2422	court, stand my good lord, (pray,) in your good	85
FTLN 2423	report.	
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 2424	Fare you well, Falstaff. I, in my condition,	
FTLN 2425	Shall better speak of you than you deserve.	
	「All but Falstaff』〈exit.〉	
FTLN 2426	FALSTAFF I would you had (but) the wit; 'twere better	
FTLN 2427	than your dukedom. Good faith, this same young	90
FTLN 2428	sober-blooded boy doth not love me, nor a man	
FTLN 2429	cannot make him laugh. But that's no marvel; he	
FTLN 2430	drinks no wine. There's never none of these demure	
FTLN 2431	boys come to any proof, for thin drink doth so	
FTLN 2432	overcool their blood, and making many fish meals,	95
FTLN 2433	that they fall into a kind of male green-sickness, and	
FTLN 2434	then, when they marry, they get wenches. They are	
FTLN 2435	generally fools and cowards, which some of us	
FTLN 2436	should be too, but for inflammation. A good sherris	
FTLN 2437	sack hath a two-fold operation in it. It ascends me	100
FTLN 2438	into the brain, dries me there all the foolish and	
FTLN 2439	dull and crudy vapors which environ it, makes it	
FTLN 2440	apprehensive, quick, forgetive, full of nimble, fiery,	
FTLN 2441	and delectable shapes, which, delivered o'er to the	
FTLN 2442	voice, the tongue, which is the birth, becomes	105
FTLN 2443	excellent wit. The second property of your excellent	
FTLN 2444	sherris is the warming of the blood, which,	
FTLN 2445	before cold and settled, left the liver white and pale,	
FTLN 2446	which is the badge of pusillanimity and cowardice.	
FTLN 2447	But the sherris warms it and makes it course from	110
FTLN 2448	the inwards to the parts' extremes. It illumineth the	

FTLN 2467 FTLN 2468 FTLN 2469 FTLN 2470 FTLN 2471 FTLN 2472 FTLN 2473

FTLN 2449	face, which as a beacon gives warning to all the rest	
FTLN 2450	of this little kingdom, man, to arm; and then the	
FTLN 2451	vital commoners and inland petty spirits muster me	
FTLN 2452	all to their captain, the heart, who, great and puffed	115
FTLN 2453	up with this retinue, doth any deed of courage, and	
FTLN 2454	this valor comes of sherris. So that skill in the	
FTLN 2455	weapon is nothing without sack, for that sets it	
FTLN 2456	a-work; and learning a mere hoard of gold kept	
FTLN 2457	by a devil till sack commences it and sets it in	120
FTLN 2458	act and use. Hereof comes it that Prince Harry is	
FTLN 2459	valiant, for the cold blood he did naturally inherit	
FTLN 2460	of his father he hath, like lean, sterile, and bare	
FTLN 2461	land, manured, husbanded, and tilled with excellent	
FTLN 2462	endeavor of drinking good and good store	125
FTLN 2463	of fertile sherris, that he is become very hot and valiant.	
FTLN 2464	If I had a thousand sons, the first human principle	
FTLN 2465	I would teach them should be to forswear	
FTLN 2466	thin potations and to addict themselves to sack.	

Enter Bardolph.

How r	now, Bardolph?	130
BARDOLPH	The army is discharged all and gone.	
FALSTAFF	Let them go. I'll through Gloucestershire,	
and th	ere will I visit Master Robert Shallow,	
Esquir	e. I have him already temp'ring between my	
finger	and my thumb, and shortly will I seal with	135
him. C	Come away.	
	⟨ <i>They exit.</i> ⟩	

⟨Scene 「3¬⟩

Enter the King in a chair, Warwick, Thomas Duke of Clarence, Humphrey Duke of Gloucester, and Attendants.

	KING	
FTLN 2474	Now, lords, if God doth give successful end	
FTLN 2475	To this debate that bleedeth at our doors,	
FTLN 2476	We will our youth lead on to higher fields	
FTLN 2477	And draw no swords but what are sanctified.	
FTLN 2478	Our navy is addressed, our power collected,	5
FTLN 2479	Our substitutes in absence well invested,	
FTLN 2480	And everything lies level to our wish.	
FTLN 2481	Only we want a little personal strength;	
FTLN 2482	And pause us till these rebels now afoot	
FTLN 2483	Come underneath the yoke of government.	10
	WARWICK	
FTLN 2484	Both which we doubt not but your Majesty	
FTLN 2485	Shall soon enjoy.	
	KING	
FTLN 2486	Humphrey, my son of Gloucester, where is the	
FTLN 2487	Prince your brother?	
	HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER	
FTLN 2488	I think he's gone to hunt, my lord, at Windsor.	15
	KING	
FTLN 2489	And how accompanied?	
FTLN 2490	HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER I do not know, my lord.	
	KING	
FTLN 2491	Is not his brother Thomas of Clarence with him?	
	HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER	
FTLN 2492	No, my good lord, he is in presence here.	
FTLN 2493	THOMAS OF CLARENCE, <i>coming forward</i> What would	20
FTLN 2494	my lord and father?	
	KING	
FTLN 2495	Nothing but well to thee, Thomas of Clarence.	

FTLN 2496	How chance thou art not with the Prince thy	
FTLN 2497	brother?	
FTLN 2498	He loves thee, and thou dost neglect him, Thomas.	25
FTLN 2499	Thou hast a better place in his affection	
FTLN 2500	Than all thy brothers. Cherish it, my boy,	
FTLN 2501	And noble offices thou mayst effect	
FTLN 2502	Of mediation, after I am dead,	
FTLN 2503	Between his greatness and thy other brethren.	30
FTLN 2504	Therefore omit him not, blunt not his love,	
FTLN 2505	Nor lose the good advantage of his grace	
FTLN 2506	By seeming cold or careless of his will.	
FTLN 2507	For he is gracious if he be observed;	
FTLN 2508	He hath a tear for pity, and a hand	35
FTLN 2509	Open as day for (melting) charity;	
FTLN 2510	Yet notwithstanding, being incensed he is flint,	
FTLN 2511	As humorous as winter, and as sudden	
FTLN 2512	As flaws congealed in the spring of day.	
FTLN 2513	His temper therefore must be well observed.	40
FTLN 2514	Chide him for faults, and do it reverently,	
FTLN 2515	When you perceive his blood inclined to mirth;	
FTLN 2516	But, being moody, give him time and scope	
FTLN 2517	Till that his passions, like a whale on ground,	
FTLN 2518	Confound themselves with working. Learn this,	45
FTLN 2519	Thomas,	
FTLN 2520	And thou shalt prove a shelter to thy friends,	
FTLN 2521	A hoop of gold to bind thy brothers in,	
FTLN 2522	That the united vessel of their blood,	
FTLN 2523	Mingled with venom of suggestion	50
FTLN 2524	(As, force perforce, the age will pour it in),	
FTLN 2525	Shall never leak, though it do work as strong	
FTLN 2526	As aconitum or rash gunpowder.	
	THOMAS OF CLARENCE	
FTLN 2527	I shall observe him with all care and love.	
	KING	
FTLN 2528	Why art thou not at Windsor with him, Thomas?	55
	, , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , , ,	

FTLN 2557

	THOMAS OF CLARENCE	
FTLN 2529	He is not there today; he dines in London.	
	KING	
FTLN 2530	And how accompanied? (Canst thou tell that?)	
	THOMAS OF CLARENCE	
FTLN 2531	With Poins and other his continual followers.	
	KING	
FTLN 2532	Most subject is the fattest soil to weeds,	
FTLN 2533	And he, the noble image of my youth,	60
FTLN 2534	Is overspread with them; therefore my grief	
FTLN 2535	Stretches itself beyond the hour of death.	
FTLN 2536	The blood weeps from my heart when I do shape,	
FTLN 2537	In forms imaginary, th' unguided days	
FTLN 2538	And rotten times that you shall look upon	65
FTLN 2539	When I am sleeping with my ancestors.	
FTLN 2540	For when his headstrong riot hath no curb,	
FTLN 2541	When rage and hot blood are his counsellors,	
FTLN 2542	When means and lavish manners meet together,	
FTLN 2543	O, with what wings shall his affections fly	70
FTLN 2544	Towards fronting peril and opposed decay!	
	WARWICK	
FTLN 2545	My gracious lord, you look beyond him quite.	
FTLN 2546	The Prince but studies his companions	
FTLN 2547	Like a strange tongue, wherein, to gain the	
FTLN 2548	language,	75
FTLN 2549	'Tis needful that the most immodest word	
FTLN 2550	Be looked upon and learned; which, once attained,	
FTLN 2551	Your Highness knows, comes to no further use	
FTLN 2552	But to be known and hated. So, like gross terms,	
FTLN 2553	The Prince will, in the perfectness of time,	80
FTLN 2554	Cast off his followers, and their memory	
FTLN 2555	Shall as a pattern or a measure live,	
FTLN 2556	By which his Grace must mete the lives of others,	

Turning past evils to advantages.

ACT	4.	SC.	1
-----	----	-----	---

Henry IV, Part 2

183

	105 Henry IV, I art 2
	KING
2558	'Tis seldom when the bee doth leave her comb
2559	In the dead carrion.
	Enter Westmoreland.
2560	Who's here? Westmoreland?
	WESTMORELAND
2561	Health to my sovereign, and new happiness
562	Added to that that I am to deliver.
563	Prince John your son doth kiss your Grace's hand.
564	Mowbray, the Bishop Scroop, Hastings, and all
565	Are brought to the correction of your law.
566	There is not now a rebel's sword unsheathed,
567	But peace puts forth her olive everywhere.
568	The manner how this action hath been borne
569	Here at more leisure may your Highness read
570	With every course in his particular.
	He gives the King a paper. KING
571	O Westmoreland, thou art a summer bird,
572	Which ever in the haunch of winter sings
573	The lifting up of day.
	5 1 5 mg
	Enter Harcourt.
574	Look, here's more news.
	HARCOURT
575	From enemies heavens keep your Majesty,
576	And when they stand against you, may they fall
577	As those that I am come to tell you of.
578	The Earl Northumberland and the Lord Bardolph,
579	With a great power of English and of Scots,
580	Are by the shrieve of Yorkshire overthrown.
581	The manner and true order of the fight
582	This packet, please it you, contains at large.
	He gives the King papers.

ACT	4.	SC.	3

	WING	
EEE N. 2502	KING	110
FTLN 2583	And wherefore should these good news make me	110
FTLN 2584	sick?	
FTLN 2585	Will Fortune never come with both hands full,	
FTLN 2586	But (write) her fair words still in foulest (letters)?	
FTLN 2587	She either gives a stomach and no food—	44.5
FTLN 2588	Such are the poor, in health—or else a feast	115
FTLN 2589	And takes away the stomach—such are the rich,	
FTLN 2590	That have abundance and enjoy it not.	
FTLN 2591	I should rejoice now at this happy news,	
FTLN 2592	And now my sight fails, and my brain is giddy.	
FTLN 2593	O, me! Come near me, now I am much ill.	120
	HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER	
FTLN 2594	Comfort, your Majesty.	
FTLN 2595	THOMAS OF CLARENCE O, my royal father!	
	WESTMORELAND	
FTLN 2596	My sovereign lord, cheer up yourself, look up.	
	WARWICK	
FTLN 2597	Be patient, princes. You do know these fits	
FTLN 2598	Are with his Highness very ordinary.	125
FTLN 2599	Stand from him, give him air. He'll straight be	
FTLN 2600	well.	
	THOMAS OF CLARENCE	
FTLN 2601	No, no, he cannot long hold out these pangs.	
FTLN 2602	Th' incessant care and labor of his mind	
FTLN 2603	Hath wrought the mure that should confine it in	130
FTLN 2604	So thin that life looks through (and will break out.)	
	HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER	
FTLN 2605	The people fear me, for they do observe	
FTLN 2606	Unfathered heirs and loathly births of nature.	
FTLN 2607	The seasons change their manners, as the year	
FTLN 2608	Had found some months asleep and leapt them	135
FTLN 2609	over.	
	THOMAS OF CLARENCE	
FTLN 2610	The river hath thrice flowed, no ebb between,	
FTLN 2611	And the old folk, time's doting chronicles,	

ACT	4.	SC.	3

FTLN 2612	Say it did so a little time before	
FTLN 2613	That our great-grandsire, Edward, sicked and died.	1
	WARWICK	-
FTLN 2614	Speak lower, princes, for the King recovers.	
	HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER	
FTLN 2615	This apoplexy will certain be his end.	
	KING	
FTLN 2616	I pray you take me up and bear me hence	
FTLN 2617	Into some other chamber. (Softly, pray.)	
	The King is carried to a bed on another	
	part of the stage.	
FTLN 2618	Let there be no noise made, my gentle friends,	1
FTLN 2619	Unless some dull and favorable hand	
FTLN 2620	Will whisper music to my weary spirit.	
	WARWICK, \[\text{to an Attendant} \]	
FTLN 2621	Call for the music in the other room.	
	KING	
FTLN 2622	Set me the crown upon my pillow here.	
	The crown is placed on the bed.	
	THOMAS OF CLARENCE, [aside to the others]	
FTLN 2623	His eye is hollow, and he changes much.	1
	WARWICK	
FTLN 2624	Less noise, less noise.	
	Enter (Prince) Harry.	
FTLN 2625	PRINCE Who saw the Duke of Clarence?	
	THOMAS OF CLARENCE, weeping	
FTLN 2626	I am here, brother, full of heaviness.	
	PRINCE	
FTLN 2627	How now, rain within doors, and none abroad?	
FTLN 2628	How doth the King?	1
FTLN 2629	HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER Exceeding ill.	
	PRINCE	
FTLN 2630	Heard he the good news yet? Tell it him.	
	HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER	
FTLN 2631	He altered much upon the hearing it.	

FTLN 2632	PRINCE If he be sick with joy, he'll recover without	
FTLN 2633	physic.	160
	WARWICK	
FTLN 2634	Not so much noise, my lords.—Sweet prince, speak	
FTLN 2635	low.	
FTLN 2636	The King your father is disposed to sleep.	
	THOMAS OF CLARENCE	
FTLN 2637	Let us withdraw into the other room.	
	WARWICK	
FTLN 2638	Will 't please your Grace to go along with us?	165
	PRINCE	
FTLN 2639	No, I will sit and watch here by the King.	
	[All but Prince and King exit.]	
FTLN 2640	Why doth the crown lie there upon his pillow,	
FTLN 2641	Being so troublesome a bedfellow?	
FTLN 2642	O polished perturbation, golden care,	
FTLN 2643	That keep'st the ports of slumber open wide	170
FTLN 2644	To many a watchful night! Sleep with it now;	
FTLN 2645	Yet not so sound and half so deeply sweet	
FTLN 2646	As he whose brow with homely biggen bound	
FTLN 2647	Snores out the watch of night. O majesty,	
FTLN 2648	When thou dost pinch thy bearer, thou dost sit	175
FTLN 2649	Like a rich armor worn in heat of day,	
FTLN 2650	That scald'st with safety. By his gates of breath	
FTLN 2651	There lies a downy feather which stirs not;	
FTLN 2652	Did he suspire, that light and weightless down	
FTLN 2653	Perforce must move. My gracious lord, my father,	180
FTLN 2654	This sleep is sound indeed. This is a sleep	
FTLN 2655	That from this golden rigol hath divorced	
FTLN 2656	So many English kings. Thy due from me	
FTLN 2657	Is tears and heavy sorrows of the blood,	
FTLN 2658	Which nature, love, and filial tenderness	185
FTLN 2659	Shall, O dear father, pay thee plenteously.	
FTLN 2660	My due from thee is this imperial crown,	
FTLN 2661	Which, as immediate from thy place and blood,	
FTLN 2662	Derives itself to me. <i>He puts on the crown.</i> Lo,	
FTLN 2663	where it sits,	190

ACT	1	SC	2
ACI	4.	SC.	J

FTLN 2664	Which God shall guard. And, put the world's whole	
FTLN 2665	strength	
FTLN 2666	Into one giant arm, it shall not force	
FTLN 2667	This lineal honor from me. This from thee	
FTLN 2668	Will I to mine leave, as 'tis left to me.	195
	He exits with the crown.	
FTLN 2669	KING, <i>rising up in his bed</i> Warwick! Gloucester!	
FTLN 2670	Clarence!	
	Enter Warwick, Gloucester, Clarence, 「and others.]	
FTLN 2671	THOMAS OF CLARENCE Doth the King call?	
	WARWICK	
FTLN 2672	What would your Majesty? (How fares your Grace?)	
	KING	
FTLN 2673	Why did you leave me here alone, my lords?	200
	THOMAS OF CLARENCE	
FTLN 2674	We left the Prince my brother here, my liege,	
FTLN 2675	Who undertook to sit and watch by you.	
	KING	
FTLN 2676	The Prince of Wales? Where is he? Let me see him.	
FTLN 2677	[He is not here.]	
	WARWICK	
FTLN 2678	This door is open. He is gone this way.	205
	HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER	
FTLN 2679	He came not through the chamber where we	
FTLN 2680	stayed.	
FFF 11 6 604	KING Where is the energy Wheeteels it from new sillow?	
FTLN 2681	Where is the crown? Who took it from my pillow? WARWICK	
FTLN 2682	When we withdrew, my liege, we left it here.	
1 1LN 2002	KING	
FTLN 2683	The Prince hath ta'en it hence. Go seek him out.	210
FTLN 2684	Is he so hasty that he doth suppose my sleep my	210
FTLN 2685	death?	
FTLN 2686	Find him, my Lord of Warwick. Chide him hither.	
	Warwick exits.	
FTLN 2687	This part of his conjoins with my disease	
	i j	

FTLN 2688	And helps to end me. See, sons, what things you	215
FTLN 2689	are,	
FTLN 2690	How quickly nature falls into revolt	
FTLN 2691	When gold becomes her object!	
FTLN 2692	For this the foolish overcareful fathers	
FTLN 2693	Have broke their sleep with thoughts,	220
FTLN 2694	Their brains with care, their bones with industry.	
FTLN 2695	For this they have engrossed and (piled) up	
FTLN 2696	The cankered heaps of strange-achieved gold.	
FTLN 2697	For this they have been thoughtful to invest	
FTLN 2698	Their sons with arts and martial exercises—	225
FTLN 2699	When, like the bee, tolling from every flower	
FTLN 2700	(The virtuous sweets,)	
FTLN 2701	Our (thighs) packed with wax, our mouths with	
FTLN 2702	honey,	
FTLN 2703	We bring it to the hive and, like the bees,	230
FTLN 2704	Are murdered for our pains. This bitter taste	
FTLN 2705	Yields his engrossments to the ending father.	
	Enter Warwick.	
	Enter Warwick.	
FTLN 2706	Enter Warwick. Now where is he that will not stay so long	
FTLN 2706 FTLN 2707	Now where is he that will not stay so long	
	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK	235
FTLN 2707	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room,	235
FTLN 2707 FTLN 2708	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room, Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks,	235
FTLN 2707 FTLN 2708 FTLN 2709	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room, Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks, With such a deep demeanor in great sorrow	235
FTLN 2707 FTLN 2708 FTLN 2709 FTLN 2710	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room, Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks, With such a deep demeanor in great sorrow That tyranny, which never quaffed but blood,	235
FTLN 2707 FTLN 2708 FTLN 2709 FTLN 2710 FTLN 2711	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room, Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks, With such a deep demeanor in great sorrow That tyranny, which never quaffed but blood, Would, by beholding him, have washed his knife	235 240
FTLN 2707 FTLN 2708 FTLN 2709 FTLN 2710 FTLN 2711 FTLN 2712	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room, Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks, With such a deep demeanor in great sorrow That tyranny, which never quaffed but blood,	
FTLN 2707 FTLN 2708 FTLN 2709 FTLN 2710 FTLN 2711 FTLN 2712	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room, Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks, With such a deep demeanor in great sorrow That tyranny, which never quaffed but blood, Would, by beholding him, have washed his knife With gentle eyedrops. He is coming hither. KING	
FTLN 2707 FTLN 2708 FTLN 2709 FTLN 2710 FTLN 2711 FTLN 2712 FTLN 2713	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room, Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks, With such a deep demeanor in great sorrow That tyranny, which never quaffed but blood, Would, by beholding him, have washed his knife With gentle eyedrops. He is coming hither.	
FTLN 2707 FTLN 2708 FTLN 2709 FTLN 2710 FTLN 2711 FTLN 2712 FTLN 2713	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room, Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks, With such a deep demeanor in great sorrow That tyranny, which never quaffed but blood, Would, by beholding him, have washed his knife With gentle eyedrops. He is coming hither. KING	
FTLN 2707 FTLN 2708 FTLN 2709 FTLN 2710 FTLN 2711 FTLN 2712 FTLN 2713	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room, Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks, With such a deep demeanor in great sorrow That tyranny, which never quaffed but blood, Would, by beholding him, have washed his knife With gentle eyedrops. He is coming hither. KING But wherefore did he take away the crown?	
FTLN 2707 FTLN 2708 FTLN 2709 FTLN 2710 FTLN 2711 FTLN 2712 FTLN 2713	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room, Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks, With such a deep demeanor in great sorrow That tyranny, which never quaffed but blood, Would, by beholding him, have washed his knife With gentle eyedrops. He is coming hither. KING But wherefore did he take away the crown?	
FTLN 2707 FTLN 2708 FTLN 2709 FTLN 2710 FTLN 2711 FTLN 2712 FTLN 2713 FTLN 2714	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room, Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks, With such a deep demeanor in great sorrow That tyranny, which never quaffed but blood, Would, by beholding him, have washed his knife With gentle eyedrops. He is coming hither. KING But wherefore did he take away the crown? Enter (Prince) Harry with the crown.	
FTLN 2707 FTLN 2708 FTLN 2709 FTLN 2710 FTLN 2711 FTLN 2712 FTLN 2713 FTLN 2714	Now where is he that will not stay so long Till his friend sickness (hath) determined me? WARWICK My lord, I found the Prince in the next room, Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks, With such a deep demeanor in great sorrow That tyranny, which never quaffed but blood, Would, by beholding him, have washed his knife With gentle eyedrops. He is coming hither. KING But wherefore did he take away the crown? Enter (Prince) Harry with the crown.	

-	_		-	_	_
1)	1)	IN	. 14	r١	
М	r.	ш	v	١,	г.

FTLN 2717	I never thought to hear you speak again.	
	KING	
FTLN 2718	Thy wish was father, Harry, to that thought.	245
FTLN 2719	I stay too long by thee; I weary thee.	
FTLN 2720	Dost thou so hunger for mine empty chair	
FTLN 2721	That thou wilt needs invest thee with my honors	
FTLN 2722	Before thy hour be ripe? O foolish youth,	
FTLN 2723	Thou seek'st the greatness that will overwhelm	250
FTLN 2724	thee.	
FTLN 2725	Stay but a little, for my cloud of dignity	
FTLN 2726	Is held from falling with so weak a wind	
FTLN 2727	That it will quickly drop. My day is dim.	
FTLN 2728	Thou hast stol'n that which after some few hours	255
FTLN 2729	Were thine without offense, and at my death	
FTLN 2730	Thou hast sealed up my expectation.	
FTLN 2731	Thy life did manifest thou loved'st me not,	
FTLN 2732	And thou wilt have me die assured of it.	
FTLN 2733	Thou hid'st a thousand daggers in thy thoughts,	260
FTLN 2734	Whom thou hast whetted on thy stony heart	
FTLN 2735	To stab at half an hour of my life.	
FTLN 2736	What, canst thou not forbear me half an hour?	
FTLN 2737	Then get thee gone, and dig my grave thyself,	
FTLN 2738	And bid the merry bells ring to thine ear	265
FTLN 2739	That thou art crownèd, not that I am dead.	
FTLN 2740	Let all the tears that should bedew my hearse	
FTLN 2741	Be drops of balm to sanctify thy head;	
FTLN 2742	Only compound me with forgotten dust.	
FTLN 2743	Give that which gave thee life unto the worms.	270
FTLN 2744	Pluck down my officers, break my decrees,	
FTLN 2745	For now a time is come to mock at form.	
FTLN 2746	Harry the Fifth is crowned. Up, vanity,	
FTLN 2747	Down, royal state, all you sage councillors,	
FTLN 2748	hence,	275
FTLN 2749	And to the English court assemble now,	
FTLN 2750	From every region, apes of idleness.	

FTLN 2751	Now, neighbor confines, purge you of your scum.	
FTLN 2752	Have you a ruffian that will swear, drink, dance,	
FTLN 2753	Revel the night, rob, murder, and commit	280
FTLN 2754	The oldest sins the newest kind of ways?	
FTLN 2755	Be happy, he will trouble you no more.	
FTLN 2756	England shall double gild his treble guilt.	
FTLN 2757	England shall give him office, honor, might,	
FTLN 2758	For the fifth Harry from curbed license plucks	285
FTLN 2759	The muzzle of restraint, and the wild dog	
FTLN 2760	Shall flesh his tooth on every innocent.	
FTLN 2761	O my poor kingdom, sick with civil blows!	
FTLN 2762	When that my care could not withhold thy riots,	
FTLN 2763	What wilt thou do when riot is thy care?	290
FTLN 2764	O, thou wilt be a wilderness again,	
FTLN 2765	Peopled with wolves, thy old inhabitants.	
	PRINCE, <i>placing the crown on the pillow</i>	
FTLN 2766	O pardon me, my liege! But for my tears,	
FTLN 2767	The moist impediments unto my speech,	
FTLN 2768	I had forestalled this dear and deep rebuke	295
FTLN 2769	Ere you with grief had spoke and I had heard	
FTLN 2770	The course of it so far. There is your crown,	
FTLN 2771	And He that wears the crown immortally	
FTLN 2772	Long guard it yours. "He kneels." If I affect it	
FTLN 2773	more	300
FTLN 2774	Than as your honor and as your renown,	
FTLN 2775	Let me no more from this obedience rise,	
FTLN 2776	Which my most inward true and duteous spirit	
FTLN 2777	Teacheth this prostrate and exterior bending.	
FTLN 2778	God witness with me, when I here came in	305
FTLN 2779	And found no course of breath within your Majesty,	
FTLN 2780	How cold it struck my heart! If I do feign,	
FTLN 2781	O, let me in my present wildness die	
FTLN 2782	And never live to show th' incredulous world	
FTLN 2783	The noble change that I have purposèd.	310
FTLN 2784	Coming to look on you, thinking you dead,	
FTLN 2785	And dead almost, my liege, to think you were,	

FTLN 2786	I spake unto this crown as having sense,	
FTLN 2787	And thus upbraided it: "The care on thee	
FTLN 2788	depending	315
FTLN 2789	Hath fed upon the body of my father;	
FTLN 2790	Therefore thou best of gold art (worst of) gold.	
FTLN 2791	Other, less fine in carat, (is) more precious,	
FTLN 2792	Preserving life in med'cine potable;	
FTLN 2793	But thou, most fine, most honored, most renowned,	320
FTLN 2794	Hast eat thy bearer up." Thus, my most royal liege,	
FTLN 2795	Accusing it, I put it on my head	
FTLN 2796	To try with it, as with an enemy	
FTLN 2797	That had before my face murdered my father,	
FTLN 2798	The quarrel of a true inheritor.	325
FTLN 2799	But if it did infect my blood with joy	
FTLN 2800	Or swell my thoughts to any strain of pride,	
FTLN 2801	If any rebel or vain spirit of mine	
FTLN 2802	Did with the least affection of a welcome	
FTLN 2803	Give entertainment to the might of it,	330
FTLN 2804	Let God forever keep it from my head	
FTLN 2805	And make me as the poorest vassal is	
FTLN 2806	That doth with awe and terror kneel to it.	
FTLN 2807	KING (O my son,)	
FTLN 2808	God put (it) in thy mind to take it hence	335
FTLN 2809	That thou mightst win the more thy father's love,	
FTLN 2810	Pleading so wisely in excuse of it.	
FTLN 2811	Come hither, Harry, sit thou by my bed	
FTLN 2812	And hear, I think, the very latest counsel	
FTLN 2813	That ever I shall breathe.	340
	The Prince rises from his knees and sits	
	near the bed.	
FTLN 2814	God knows, my son,	
FTLN 2815	By what bypaths and indirect crook'd ways	
FTLN 2816	I met this crown, and I myself know well	
FTLN 2817	How troublesome it sat upon my head.	
FTLN 2818	To thee it shall descend with better quiet,	345
FTLN 2819	Better opinion, better confirmation,	

FTLN 2820	For all the soil of the achievement goes	
FTLN 2821	With me into the earth. It seemed in me	
FTLN 2822	But as an honor snatched with boist'rous hand,	
FTLN 2823	And I had many living to upbraid	350
FTLN 2824	My gain of it by their assistances,	
FTLN 2825	Which daily grew to quarrel and to bloodshed,	
FTLN 2826	Wounding supposèd peace. All these bold fears	
FTLN 2827	Thou seest with peril I have answered,	
FTLN 2828	For all my reign hath been but as a scene	355
FTLN 2829	Acting that argument. And now my death	
FTLN 2830	Changes the mood, for what in me was purchased	
FTLN 2831	Falls upon thee in a more fairer sort.	
FTLN 2832	So thou the garland wear'st successively.	
FTLN 2833	Yet though thou stand'st more sure than I could do,	360
FTLN 2834	Thou art not firm enough, since griefs are green,	
FTLN 2835	And all [my] friends, which thou must make thy	
FTLN 2836	friends,	
FTLN 2837	Have but their stings and teeth newly ta'en out,	
FTLN 2838	By whose fell working I was first advanced	365
FTLN 2839	And by whose power I well might lodge a fear	
FTLN 2840	To be again displaced; which to avoid,	
FTLN 2841	I cut them off and had a purpose now	
FTLN 2842	To lead out many to the Holy Land,	
FTLN 2843	Lest rest and lying still might make them look	370
FTLN 2844	Too near unto my state. Therefore, my Harry,	
FTLN 2845	Be it thy course to busy giddy minds	
FTLN 2846	With foreign quarrels, that action, hence borne	
FTLN 2847	out,	
FTLN 2848	May waste the memory of the former days.	375
FTLN 2849	More would I, but my lungs are wasted so	
FTLN 2850	That strength of speech is utterly denied me.	
FTLN 2851	How I came by the crown, O God forgive,	
FTLN 2852	And grant it may with thee in true peace live.	
FTLN 2853	PRINCE (My gracious liege,)	380
FTLN 2854	You won it, wore it, kept it, gave it me.	
	- · · · -	

ACT	1	SC	2
ACI	4.	SC.	J

FTLN 2855 FTLN 2856 FTLN 2857	Then plain and right must my possession be, Which I with more than with a common pain 'Gainst all the world will rightfully maintain.	
	Enter (John of) Lancaster [and others.]	
	KING	
FTLN 2858	Look, look, here comes my John of Lancaster.	385
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 2859	Health, peace, and happiness to my royal father.	
	KING	
FTLN 2860	Thou bring'st me happiness and peace, son John,	
FTLN 2861	But health, alack, with youthful wings is flown	
FTLN 2862	From this bare withered trunk. Upon thy sight	
FTLN 2863	My worldly business makes a period.	390
FTLN 2864	Where is my Lord of Warwick?	
FTLN 2865	PRINCE My Lord of Warwick.	
	$\lceil Enter \rceil \langle Warwick. \rangle$	
	Enter (Warwick.) KING	
FTLN 2866	KING	
FTLN 2866 FTLN 2867	KING Doth any name particular belong	
	KING	
	KING Doth any name particular belong Unto the lodging where I first did swoon?	395
FTLN 2867	Doth any name particular belong Unto the lodging where I first did swoon? WARWICK	395
FTLN 2867	Doth any name particular belong Unto the lodging where I first did swoon? WARWICK 'Tis called Jerusalem, my noble lord.	395
FTLN 2867 FTLN 2868	Doth any name particular belong Unto the lodging where I first did swoon? WARWICK 'Tis called Jerusalem, my noble lord. KING	395
FTLN 2867 FTLN 2868 FTLN 2869	Doth any name particular belong Unto the lodging where I first did swoon? WARWICK 'Tis called Jerusalem, my noble lord. KING Laud be to God! Even there my life must end.	395
FTLN 2867 FTLN 2868 FTLN 2869 FTLN 2870	Doth any name particular belong Unto the lodging where I first did swoon? WARWICK 'Tis called Jerusalem, my noble lord. KING Laud be to God! Even there my life must end. It hath been prophesied to me many years,	395
FTLN 2867 FTLN 2868 FTLN 2869 FTLN 2870 FTLN 2871	Doth any name particular belong Unto the lodging where I first did swoon? WARWICK 'Tis called Jerusalem, my noble lord. KING Laud be to God! Even there my life must end. It hath been prophesied to me many years, I should not die but in Jerusalem,	395 400
FTLN 2867 FTLN 2868 FTLN 2869 FTLN 2870 FTLN 2871 FTLN 2872	Doth any name particular belong Unto the lodging where I first did swoon? WARWICK 'Tis called Jerusalem, my noble lord. KING Laud be to God! Even there my life must end. It hath been prophesied to me many years, I should not die but in Jerusalem, Which vainly I supposed the Holy Land.	
FTLN 2868 FTLN 2869 FTLN 2870 FTLN 2871 FTLN 2872 FTLN 2873	Doth any name particular belong Unto the lodging where I first did swoon? WARWICK 'Tis called Jerusalem, my noble lord. KING Laud be to God! Even there my life must end. It hath been prophesied to me many years, I should not die but in Jerusalem, Which vainly I supposed the Holy Land. But bear me to that chamber; there I'll lie.	

⟨Scene 1⟩ Enter Shallow, Falstaff, ⟨Page,⟩ and Bardolph.

FTLN 2875 FTLN 2876 FTLN 2877	SHALLOW By cock and pie, sir, you shall not away tonight.—What, Davy, I say! FALSTAFF You must excuse me, Master Robert Shallow.	
FTLN 2878	SHALLOW I will not excuse you. You shall not be excused. Excuses shall not be admitted. There is no	5
FTLN 2879	excused. Excuses shall not be admitted. There is no excuse shall serve. You shall not be excused.—	3
FTLN 2880		
FTLN 2881	Why, Davy!	
	$\lceil Enter \rceil \langle Davy. \rangle$	
FTLN 2882	DAVY Here, sir.	
FTLN 2883	SHALLOW Davy, Davy, Davy, let me see, Davy, let	
FTLN 2884	me see, Davy, let me see. Yea, marry, William cook,	10
FTLN 2885	bid him come hither.—Sir John, you shall not be	
FTLN 2886	excused.	
FTLN 2887	DAVY Marry, sir, thus: those precepts cannot be served.	
FTLN 2888	And again, sir: shall we sow the hade land with	
FTLN 2889	wheat?	15
FTLN 2890	SHALLOW With red wheat, Davy. But for William cook,	
FTLN 2891	are there no young pigeons?	
FTLN 2892	DAVY Yes, sir. Here is now the smith's note for shoeing	
FTLN 2893	and plow irons.	
FTLN 2894	SHALLOW Let it be cast and paid.—Sir John, you shall	20
FTLN 2895	not be excused.	
FTLN 2896	DAVY Now, sir, a new link to the bucket must needs be	
	207	

FTLN 2897	had. And, sir, do you mean to stop any of William's	
FTLN 2898	wages about the sack he lost (the other day) at	
FTLN 2899	(Hinckley) Fair?	25
FTLN 2900	SHALLOW He shall answer it. Some pigeons, Davy, a	
FTLN 2901	couple of short-legged hens, a joint of mutton, and	
FTLN 2902	any pretty little tiny kickshaws, tell William cook.	
	「Shallow and Davy walk aside.	
FTLN 2903	DAVY Doth the man of war stay all night, sir?	
FTLN 2904	SHALLOW Yea, Davy, I will use him well. A friend i' th'	30
FTLN 2905	court is better than a penny in purse. Use his men	
FTLN 2906	well, Davy, for they are arrant knaves and will	
FTLN 2907	backbite.	
FTLN 2908	DAVY No worse than they are back-bitten, sir, for they	
FTLN 2909	have marvelous foul linen.	35
FTLN 2910	SHALLOW Well-conceited, Davy. About thy business,	
FTLN 2911	Davy.	
FTLN 2912	DAVY I beseech you, sir, to countenance William Visor	
FTLN 2913	of Woncot against Clement Perkes o' th' hill.	
FTLN 2914	SHALLOW There is many complaints, Davy, against that	40
FTLN 2915	Visor. That Visor is an arrant knave, on my	
FTLN 2916	knowledge.	
FTLN 2917	DAVY I grant your Worship that he is a knave, sir, but	
FTLN 2918	yet, God forbid, sir, but a knave should have some	
FTLN 2919	countenance at his friend's request. An honest	45
FTLN 2920	man, sir, is able to speak for himself when a knave is	
FTLN 2921	not. I have served your Worship truly, sir, this eight	
FTLN 2922	years; an I cannot once or twice in a quarter bear	
FTLN 2923	out a knave against an honest man, I have (but a	- ^
FTLN 2924	very) little credit with your Worship. The knave is	50
FTLN 2925	mine honest friend, sir; therefore I beseech you let	
FTLN 2926	him be countenanced.	
FTLN 2927	SHALLOW Go to, I say, he shall have no wrong. Look	
FTLN 2928	about, Davy. <i>Davy exits</i> . Where are you, Sir John?	
FTLN 2929	Come, come, off with your boots.—Give me	55
FTLN 2930	your hand, Master Bardolph.	

FTLN 2931	BARDOLPH I am glad to see your Worship.	
FTLN 2932	SHALLOW I thank thee with (all) my heart, kind Master	
FTLN 2933	Bardolph, (<i>to Page</i>) and welcome, my tall	
FTLN 2934	fellow.—Come, Sir John.	60
FTLN 2935	FALSTAFF I'll follow you, good Master Robert Shallow.	
FTLN 2936	Shallow exits. Bardolph, look to our horses. Bardolph	
FTLN 2937	and Page exit. If I were sawed into quantities,	
FTLN 2938	I should make four dozen of such bearded hermits'	
FTLN 2939	staves as Master Shallow. It is a wonderful thing to	65
FTLN 2940	see the semblable coherence of his men's spirits	
FTLN 2941	and his. They, by observing of him, do bear	
FTLN 2942	themselves like foolish justices; he, by conversing	
FTLN 2943	with them, is turned into a justice-like servingman.	
FTLN 2944	Their spirits are so married in conjunction with the	70
FTLN 2945	participation of society that they flock together in	
FTLN 2946	consent like so many wild geese. If I had a suit to	
FTLN 2947	Master Shallow, I would humor his men with the	
FTLN 2948	imputation of being near their master; if to his men,	
FTLN 2949	I would curry with Master Shallow that no man	75
FTLN 2950	could better command his servants. It is certain	
FTLN 2951	that either wise bearing or ignorant carriage is	
FTLN 2952	caught, as men take diseases, one of another. Therefore	
FTLN 2953	let men take heed of their company. I will	
FTLN 2954	devise matter enough out of this Shallow to keep	80
FTLN 2955	Prince Harry in continual laughter the wearing out	
FTLN 2956	of six fashions, which is four terms, or two actions,	
FTLN 2957	and he shall laugh without intervallums. O, it is	
FTLN 2958	much that a lie with a slight oath and a jest with a	0.5
FTLN 2959	sad brow will do with a fellow that never had the	85
FTLN 2960	ache in his shoulders. O, you shall see him laugh till	
FTLN 2961	his face be like a wet cloak ill laid up.	
FTLN 2962	SHALLOW, within Sir John.	
FTLN 2963	FALSTAFF I come, Master Shallow, I come, Master	00
FTLN 2964	Shallow. [He exits.]	90
	He exits.	

⟨Scene 2⟩ Enter Warwick 「and lord Chief Justice.

	WARWICK	
FTLN 2965	How now, my Lord Chief Justice, whither away?	
FTLN 2966	CHIEF JUSTICE How doth the King?	
	WARWICK	
FTLN 2967	Exceeding well. His cares are now all ended.	
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 2968	I hope, not dead.	
FTLN 2969	WARWICK He's walked the way of nature,	5
FTLN 2970	And to our purposes he lives no more.	
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 2971	I would his Majesty had called me with him.	
FTLN 2972	The service that I truly did his life	
FTLN 2973	Hath left me open to all injuries.	
	WARWICK	
FTLN 2974	Indeed, I think the young king loves you not.	10
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 2975	I know he doth not, and do arm myself	
FTLN 2976	To welcome the condition of the time,	
FTLN 2977	Which cannot look more hideously upon me	
FTLN 2978	Than I have drawn it in my fantasy.	
	Enter John, Thomas, and Humphrey.	
	Buci som, Inomas, and Hampiney.	
	WARWICK	
FTLN 2979	Here come the heavy issue of dead Harry.	15
FTLN 2980	O, that the living Harry had the temper	
FTLN 2981	Of he the worst of these three gentlemen!	
FTLN 2982	How many nobles then should hold their places	
FTLN 2983	That must strike sail to spirits of vile sort!	
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 2984	O God, I fear all will be overturned.	20
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 2985	Good morrow, cousin Warwick, good morrow.	

ACT:	5. S	C. 2
------	------	------

FTLN 2986	HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER, THOMAS OF CLARENCE Good morrow,	
	cousin.	
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 2987	We meet like men that had forgot to speak.	
	WARWICK	
FTLN 2988	We do remember, but our argument	
FTLN 2989	Is all too heavy to admit much talk.	25
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 2990	Well, peace be with him that hath made us heavy.	
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 2991	Peace be with us, lest we be heavier.	
	HUMPHREY OF GLOUCESTER	
FTLN 2992	O, good my lord, you have lost a friend indeed,	
FTLN 2993	And I dare swear you borrow not that face	
FTLN 2994	Of seeming sorrow; it is sure your own.	30
	JOHN OF LANCASTER, <i>to the Chief Justice</i>	
FTLN 2995	Though no man be assured what grace to find,	
FTLN 2996	You stand in coldest expectation.	
FTLN 2997	I am the sorrier; would 'twere otherwise.	
	THOMAS OF CLARENCE	
FTLN 2998	Well, you must now speak Sir John Falstaff fair,	
FTLN 2999	Which swims against your stream of quality.	35
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 3000	Sweet princes, what I did I did in honor,	
FTLN 3001	Led by th' impartial conduct of my soul;	
FTLN 3002	And never shall you see that I will beg	
FTLN 3003	A ragged and forestalled remission.	
FTLN 3004	If truth and upright innocency fail me,	40
FTLN 3005	I'll to the king my master that is dead	
FTLN 3006	And tell him who hath sent me after him.	
	Entou the Duines [as House W] and Dhurt	
	Enter the Prince, $\lceil as Henry V_{\gamma} \rceil$ and $Blunt$.	
FTLN 3007	WARWICK Here comes the Prince.	
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 3008	Good morrow, and God save your Majesty.	

	PRINCE	
FTLN 3009	This new and gorgeous garment majesty	45
FTLN 3010	Sits not so easy on me as you think.—	
FTLN 3011	Brothers, you (mix) your sadness with some fear.	
FTLN 3012	This is the English, not the Turkish court;	
FTLN 3013	Not Amurath an Amurath succeeds,	
FTLN 3014	But Harry Harry. Yet be sad, good brothers,	50
FTLN 3015	For, by my faith, it very well becomes you.	
FTLN 3016	Sorrow so royally in you appears	
FTLN 3017	That I will deeply put the fashion on	
FTLN 3018	And wear it in my heart. Why then, be sad.	
FTLN 3019	But entertain no more of it, good brothers,	55
FTLN 3020	Than a joint burden laid upon us all.	
FTLN 3021	For me, by heaven, I bid you be assured,	
FTLN 3022	I'll be your father and your brother too.	
FTLN 3023	Let me but bear your love, I'll bear your cares.	
FTLN 3024	Yet weep that Harry's dead, and so will I,	60
FTLN 3025	But Harry lives that shall convert those tears	
FTLN 3026	By number into hours of happiness.	
	BROTHERS	
FTLN 3027	We hope no otherwise from your Majesty.	
	PRINCE	
FTLN 3028	You all look strangely on me. <i>To the Chief Justice</i> .	
FTLN 3029	And you most.	65
FTLN 3030	You are, I think, assured I love you not.	
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 3031	I am assured, if I be measured rightly,	
FTLN 3032	Your Majesty hath no just cause to hate me.	
	PRINCE	
FTLN 3033	No? How might a prince of my great hopes forget	
FTLN 3034	So great indignities you laid upon me?	70
FTLN 3035	What, rate, rebuke, and roughly send to prison	
FTLN 3036	Th' immediate heir of England? Was this easy?	
FTLN 3037	May this be washed in Lethe and forgotten?	
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 3038	I then did use the person of your father;	

FTLN 3039	The image of his power lay then in me.	75
FTLN 3040	And in th' administration of his law,	
FTLN 3041	Whiles I was busy for the commonwealth,	
FTLN 3042	Your Highness pleased to forget my place,	
FTLN 3043	The majesty and power of law and justice,	
FTLN 3044	The image of the King whom I presented,	80
FTLN 3045	And struck me in my very seat of judgment,	
FTLN 3046	Whereon, as an offender to your father,	
FTLN 3047	I gave bold way to my authority	
FTLN 3048	And did commit you. If the deed were ill,	
FTLN 3049	Be you contented, wearing now the garland,	85
FTLN 3050	To have a son set your decrees at nought?	
FTLN 3051	To pluck down justice from your awful bench?	
FTLN 3052	To trip the course of law and blunt the sword	
FTLN 3053	That guards the peace and safety of your person?	
FTLN 3054	Nay more, to spurn at your most royal image	90
FTLN 3055	And mock your workings in a second body?	
FTLN 3056	Question your royal thoughts, make the case yours;	
FTLN 3057	Be now the father and propose a son,	
FTLN 3058	Hear your own dignity so much profaned,	
FTLN 3059	See your most dreadful laws so loosely slighted,	95
FTLN 3060	Behold yourself so by a son disdained,	
FTLN 3061	And then imagine me taking your part	
FTLN 3062	And in your power soft silencing your son.	
FTLN 3063	After this cold considerance, sentence me,	
FTLN 3064	And, as you are a king, speak in your state	100
FTLN 3065	What I have done that misbecame my place,	
FTLN 3066	My person, or my liege's sovereignty.	
	PRINCE	
FTLN 3067	You are right, justice, and you weigh this well.	
FTLN 3068	Therefore still bear the balance and the sword.	
FTLN 3069	And I do wish your honors may increase	105
FTLN 3070	Till you do live to see a son of mine	
FTLN 3071	Offend you and obey you as I did.	
FTLN 3072	So shall I live to speak my father's words:	

FTLN 3073	"Happy am I that have a man so bold	
FTLN 3074	That dares do justice on my proper son;	110
FTLN 3075	And not less happy, having such a son	
FTLN 3076	That would deliver up his greatness so	
FTLN 3077	Into the hands of justice." You did commit me,	
FTLN 3078	For which I do commit into your hand	
FTLN 3079	Th' unstainèd sword that you have used to bear,	115
FTLN 3080	With this remembrance: that you use the same	
FTLN 3081	With the like bold, just, and impartial spirit	
FTLN 3082	As you have done 'gainst me. There is my hand.	
	「They clasp hands.	
FTLN 3083	You shall be as a father to my youth,	
FTLN 3084	My voice shall sound as you do prompt mine ear,	120
FTLN 3085	And I will stoop and humble my intents	
FTLN 3086	To your well-practiced wise directions.—	
FTLN 3087	And, princes all, believe me, I beseech you:	
FTLN 3088	My father is gone wild into his grave,	
FTLN 3089	For in his tomb lie my affections,	125
FTLN 3090	And with his spirits sadly I survive	
FTLN 3091	To mock the expectation of the world,	
FTLN 3092	To frustrate prophecies, and to raze out	
FTLN 3093	Rotten opinion, who hath writ me down	
FTLN 3094	After my seeming. The tide of blood in me	130
FTLN 3095	Hath proudly flowed in vanity till now.	
FTLN 3096	Now doth it turn and ebb back to the sea,	
FTLN 3097	Where it shall mingle with the state of floods	
FTLN 3098	And flow henceforth in formal majesty.	
FTLN 3099	Now call we our high court of parliament,	135
FTLN 3100	And let us choose such limbs of noble counsel	
FTLN 3101	That the great body of our state may go	
FTLN 3102	In equal rank with the best-governed nation;	
FTLN 3103	That war, or peace, or both at once, may be	
FTLN 3104	As things acquainted and familiar to us,	140
FTLN 3105	To the Chief Justice. In which you, father, shall	
FTLN 3106	have foremost hand.	

FTLN 3107 FTLN 3108 FTLN 3109	Our coronation done, we will accite, As I before remembered, all our state. And, God consigning to my good intents,	145
FTLN 3110	No prince nor peer shall have just cause to say	
FTLN 3111	God shorten Harry's happy life one day.	
	⟨They exit.⟩	
	(Scene 3)	
	Enter Sir John (Falstaff,) Shallow, Silence, Davy,	
	Bardolph, [and] Page.	
FTLN 3112	SHALLOW Nay, you shall see my orchard, where, in an	
FTLN 3113	arbor, we will eat a last year's pippin of mine own	
FTLN 3114	graffing, with a dish of caraways, and so forth.—	
FTLN 3115	Come, cousin Silence.—And then to bed.	
FTLN 3116	FALSTAFF Fore God, you have here (a) goodly dwelling,	5
FTLN 3117	and (a) rich.	
FTLN 3118	SHALLOW Barren, barren, beggars all, beggars	
FTLN 3119	all, Sir John. Marry, good air.—Spread, Davy,	
FTLN 3120	spread, Davy. Well said, Davy.	
FTLN 3121	FALSTAFF This Davy serves you for good uses. He is	10
FTLN 3122	your servingman and your husband.	
FTLN 3123	SHALLOW A good varlet, a good varlet, a very good	
FTLN 3124	varlet, Sir John. By the Mass, I have drunk too	
FTLN 3125	much sack at supper. A good varlet. Now sit down,	
FTLN 3126	now sit down.—Come, cousin.	15
FTLN 3127	SILENCE Ah, sirrah, quoth he, we shall	
FTLN 3128	Sings. Do nothing but eat and make good cheer,	
FTLN 3129	And praise God for the merry year,	
FTLN 3130	When flesh is cheap and females dear,	
FTLN 3131	And lusty lads roam here and there	20
FTLN 3132	So merrily,	
FTLN 3133	And ever among so merrily.	
FTLN 3134	FALSTAFF There's a merry heart!—Good Master Silence,	
FTLN 3135	I'll give you a health for that anon.	

ACT	5.	SC.	3
_			-

FTLN 3136	SHALLOW Give Master Bardolph some wine, Davy.	25
FTLN 3137	DAVY, <i>to the guests</i> Sweet sir, sit. I'll be with you	
FTLN 3138	anon. Most sweet sir, sit. Master page, good master	
FTLN 3139	page, sit. Proface. What you want in meat, we'll	
FTLN 3140	have in drink, but you must bear. The heart's all.	
	THe exits.	
FTLN 3141	SHALLOW Be merry, Master Bardolph.—And, my little	30
FTLN 3142	soldier there, be merry.	
	SILENCE Sings	
FTLN 3143	Be merry, be merry, my wife has all,	
FTLN 3144	For women are shrews, both short and tall.	
FTLN 3145	Tis merry in hall when beards wags all,	
FTLN 3146	And welcome merry Shrovetide.	35
FTLN 3147	Be merry, be merry.	
FTLN 3148	FALSTAFF I did not think Master Silence had been a	
FTLN 3149	man of this mettle.	
FTLN 3150	SILENCE Who, I? I have been merry twice and once ere	
FTLN 3151	now.	40
	Enter Davy.	
FTLN 3152	DAVY, <i>to the guests</i> There's a dish of leather-coats for	
FTLN 3153	you.	
FTLN 3154	SHALLOW Davy!	
FTLN 3155	DAVY Your Worship, I'll be with you straight.—A cup	
FTLN 3156	of wine, sir.	45
	SILENCE sings	
FTLN 3157	A cup of wine that's brisk and fine,	
FTLN 3158	And drink unto thee, leman mine,	
FTLN 3159	And a merry heart lives long-a.	
FTLN 3160	FALSTAFF Well said, Master Silence.	
FTLN 3161	SILENCE And we shall be merry; now comes in the	50
FTLN 3162	sweet o' th' night.	
FTLN 3163	EALCEAEE II - 141 1 1 1:C- 4 Ma-4 C:1	
1 121 10100	FALSTAFF Health and long life to you, Master Silence.	
112110100	SILENCE sings	
FTLN 3164		
	SILENCE sings	
FTLN 3164	SILENCE <i>sings</i> Fill the cup, and let it come,	

ACT 5	5. SC.	3
-------	--------	---

		_
FTLN 3166	SHALLOW Honest Bardolph, welcome. If thou want'st	55
FTLN 3167	anything and wilt not call, beshrew thy heart.—	
FTLN 3168	Welcome, my little tiny thief, and welcome indeed	
FTLN 3169	too. I'll drink to Master Bardolph, and to all the	
FTLN 3170	cabileros about London.	
FTLN 3171	DAVY I hope to see London once ere I die.	60
FTLN 3172	BARDOLPH An I might see you there, Davy!	
FTLN 3173	SHALLOW By the Mass, you'll crack a quart together,	
FTLN 3174	ha, will you not, Master Bardolph?	
FTLN 3175	BARDOLPH Yea, sir, in a pottle-pot.	
FTLN 3176	SHALLOW By God's liggens, I thank thee. The knave	65
FTLN 3177	will stick by thee, I can assure thee that. He will not	
FTLN 3178	out, he. 'Tis true bred!	
FTLN 3179	BARDOLPH And I'll stick by him, sir.	
FTLN 3180	SHALLOW Why, there spoke a king. Lack nothing, be	
FTLN 3181	merry. (One knocks at door.) Look who's at door	70
FTLN 3182	there, ho. Who knocks?	
FTLN 3183	FALSTAFF Why, now you have done me right.	
	SILENCE Sings	
FTLN 3184	Do me right,	
FTLN 3185	And dub me knight,	
FTLN 3186	Samingo.	75
FTLN 3187	Is 't not so?	
FTLN 3188	FALSTAFF 'Tis so.	
FTLN 3189	SILENCE Is 't so? Why then, say an old man can do	
FTLN 3190	somewhat.	
	「Enter Davy.]	
FTLN 3191	DAVY An 't please your Worship, there's one Pistol	80
FTLN 3192	come from the court with news.	
FTLN 3193	FALSTAFF From the court? Let him come in.	
	Enter Pistol.	
FTLN 3194	How now, Pistol?	
FTLN 3195	PISTOL Sir John, God save you.	

ACT	5.	SC.	3

FALSTAFF What wind blew you hither, Pistol?	85
PISTOL Not the ill wind which blows no man to good.	
Sweet knight, thou art now one of the greatest men	
in this realm.	
SILENCE By 'r Lady, I think he be, but Goodman Puff of	
Barson.	90
PISTOL Puff?	
Puff (in) thy teeth, most recreant coward base!—	
Sir John, I am thy Pistol and thy friend,	
And helter-skelter have I rode to thee,	
And tidings do I bring, and lucky joys,	95
And golden times, and happy news of price.	
FALSTAFF I pray thee now, deliver them like a man of	
this world.	
PISTOL	
A foutre for the world and worldlings base!	
I speak of Africa and golden joys.	100
FALSTAFF	
O base Assyrian knight, what is thy news?	
Let King Cophetua know the truth thereof.	
SILENCE Sings	
And Robin Hood, Scarlet, and John.	
PISTOL	
Shall dunghill curs confront the Helicons,	
And shall good news be baffled?	105
Then, Pistol, lay thy head in Furies' lap.	
SHALLOW Honest gentleman, I know not your	
breeding.	
PISTOL Why then, lament therefor.	
SHALLOW Give me pardon, sir. If, sir, you come with	110
news from the court, I take it there's but two ways,	
either to utter them, or (to) conceal them. I am, sir,	
under the King in some authority.	
PISTOL	
Under which king, besonian? Speak or die.	
	PISTOL Not the ill wind which blows no man to good. Sweet knight, thou art now one of the greatest men in this realm. SILENCE By 'r Lady, I think he be, but Goodman Puff of Barson. PISTOL Puff? Puff (in) thy teeth, most recreant coward base!— Sir John, I am thy Pistol and thy friend, And helter-skelter have I rode to thee, And tidings do I bring, and lucky joys, And golden times, and happy news of price. FALSTAFF I pray thee now, deliver them like a man of this world. PISTOL A foutre for the world and worldlings base! I speak of Africa and golden joys. FALSTAFF O base Assyrian knight, what is thy news? Let King Cophetua know the truth thereof. SILENCE 「sings And Robin Hood, Scarlet, and John. PISTOL Shall dunghill curs confront the Helicons, And shall good news be baffled? Then, Pistol, lay thy head in Furies' lap. SHALLOW Honest gentleman, I know not your breeding. PISTOL Why then, lament therefor. SHALLOW Give me pardon, sir. If, sir, you come with news from the court, I take it there's but two ways, either to utter them, or \(\to

ACT 5. SC. 3

	SHALLOW	
FTLN 3226	Under King Harry.	115
FTLN 3227	PISTOL Harry the Fourth, or Fifth?	
	SHALLOW	
FTLN 3228	Harry the Fourth.	
FTLN 3229	PISTOL A foutre for thine office!—	
FTLN 3230	Sir John, thy tender lambkin now is king.	
FTLN 3231	Harry the Fifth's the man. I speak the truth.	120
FTLN 3232	When Pistol lies, do this and fig me, like	
FTLN 3233	The bragging Spaniard.	
FTLN 3234	FALSTAFF What, is the old king dead?	
	PISTOL	
FTLN 3235	As nail in door. The things I speak are just.	
FTLN 3236	FALSTAFF Away, Bardolph.—Saddle my horse.—	125
FTLN 3237	Master Robert Shallow, choose what office thou	
FTLN 3238	wilt in the land, 'tis thine.—Pistol, I will double-charge	
FTLN 3239	thee with dignities.	
FTLN 3240	BARDOLPH O joyful day! I would not take a (knight-hood)	
FTLN 3241	for my fortune.	130
FTLN 3242	PISTOL What, I do bring good news!	
FTLN 3243	FALSTAFF Carry Master Silence to bed.—Master Shallow,	
FTLN 3244	my Lord Shallow, be what thou wilt. I am	
FTLN 3245	Fortune's steward. Get on thy boots. We'll ride all	
FTLN 3246	night.—O sweet Pistol!—Away, Bardolph!—Come,	135
FTLN 3247	Pistol, utter more to me, and withal devise something	
FTLN 3248	to do thyself good.—Boot, boot, Master Shallow.	
FTLN 3249	I know the young king is sick for me. Let us	
FTLN 3250	take any man's horses. The laws of England are at	
FTLN 3251	my commandment. Blessed are they that have been	140
FTLN 3252	my friends, and woe to my Lord Chief Justice!	
	PISTOL 1: 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1	
FTLN 3253	Let vultures vile seize on his lungs also!	
FTLN 3254	"Where is the life that late I led?" say they.	
FTLN 3255	Why, here it is. Welcome these pleasant days.	
	$\langle They\ exit. \rangle$	

⟨Scene 4⟩ ⟨Enter Hostess Quickly, Doll Tearsheet, and Beadles.⟩

	HOGERGG N. 41 1114- C-141-4 I	
FTLN 3256	HOSTESS No, thou arrant knave. I would to God that I	
FTLN 3257	might die, that I might have thee hanged. Thou hast	
FTLN 3258	drawn my shoulder out of joint.	
FTLN 3259	BEADLE The Constables have delivered her over to me,	_
FTLN 3260	and she shall have whipping cheer (enough,) I	5
FTLN 3261	warrant her. There hath been a man or two (lately)	
FTLN 3262	killed about her.	
FTLN 3263	DOLL Nut-hook, nut-hook, you lie! Come on, I'll tell	
FTLN 3264	thee what, thou damned tripe-visaged rascal: an the	
FTLN 3265	child I (now) go with do miscarry, thou wert better	10
FTLN 3266	thou hadst struck thy mother, thou paper-faced	
FTLN 3267	villain.	
FTLN 3268	HOSTESS O the Lord, that Sir John were come! I would	
FTLN 3269	make this a bloody day to somebody. But I pray God	
FTLN 3270	the fruit of her womb (might) miscarry.	15
FTLN 3271	BEADLE If it do, you shall have a dozen of cushions	
FTLN 3272	again; you have but eleven now. Come, I charge you	
FTLN 3273	both go with me, for the man is dead that you and	
FTLN 3274	Pistol beat amongst you.	
FTLN 3275	DOLL I'll tell you what, you thin man in a censer, I will	20
FTLN 3276	have you as soundly swinged for this, you bluebottle	
FTLN 3277	rogue, you filthy famished correctioner. If you be	
FTLN 3278	not swinged, I'll forswear half-kirtles.	
FTLN 3279	BEADLE Come, come, you she-knight-errant, come.	
FTLN 3280	HOSTESS O God, that right should thus overcome	25
FTLN 3281	might! Well, of sufferance comes ease.	
FTLN 3282	DOLL Come, you rogue, come, bring me to a justice.	
FTLN 3283	HOSTESS Ay, come, you starved bloodhound.	
FTLN 3284	DOLL Goodman Death, Goodman Bones!	
FTLN 3285	HOSTESS Thou atomy, thou!	30
FTLN 3286	DOLL Come, you thin thing, come, you rascal.	
FTLN 3287	BEADLE Very well.	
	〈They exit.〉	

⟨Scene 5⟩ ⟨Enter two Grooms.⟩

FTLN 3288 FTLN 3289 FTLN 3290 FTLN 3291	⟨FIRST GROOM⟩ More rushes, more rushes. ⟨SECOND GROOM⟩ The trumpets have sounded twice. ⟨FIRST GROOM⟩ 'Twill be two o'clock ere they come from the coronation. Dispatch, dispatch. ⟨Grooms exit.⟩ Trumpets sound, and the King and his train pass over the stage. After them enter Falstaff, Shallow, Pistol, Bardolph, and the ⟨Page.⟩	
FTLN 3292	FALSTAFF Stand here by me, Master (Robert) Shallow. I	5
FTLN 3293	will make the King do you grace. I will leer upon	
FTLN 3294	him as he comes by, and do but mark the countenance	
FTLN 3295	that he will give me.	
FTLN 3296	PISTOL God bless thy lungs, good knight!	
FTLN 3297	FALSTAFF Come here, Pistol, stand behind me.—O, if I	10
FTLN 3298	had had time to have made new liveries, I would	
FTLN 3299	have bestowed the thousand pound I borrowed of	
FTLN 3300	you. But 'tis no matter. This poor show doth better.	
FTLN 3301	This doth infer the zeal I had to see him.	
FTLN 3302	(SHALLOW) It doth so.	15
FTLN 3303	FALSTAFF It shows my earnestness of affection—	
FTLN 3304	SHALLOW It doth so.	
FTLN 3305	FALSTAFF My devotion—	
FTLN 3306	SHALLOW It doth, it doth.	
FTLN 3307	FALSTAFF As it were, to ride day and night, and not to	20
FTLN 3308	deliberate, not to remember, not to have patience	
FTLN 3309	to shift me—	
FTLN 3310	SHALLOW It is best, certain.	
FTLN 3311	(FALSTAFF) But to stand stained with travel and sweating	
FTLN 3312	with desire to see him, thinking of nothing else,	25
FTLN 3313	putting all affairs else in oblivion, as if there were	
FTLN 3314	nothing else to be done but to see him.	

Henry IV, Part 2	ACT 5. SC. 5
------------------	--------------

FTLN 3315	PISTOL 'Tis semper idem, for obsque hoc nihil est; 'tis	
FTLN 3316	(all) in every part.	
FTLN 3317	SHALLOW 'Tis so indeed.	30
FTLN 3318	PISTOL My knight, I will inflame thy noble liver, and	
FTLN 3319	make thee rage. Thy Doll and Helen of thy noble	
FTLN 3320	thoughts is in base durance and contagious prison,	
FTLN 3321	haled thither by most mechanical and dirty hand.	
FTLN 3322	Rouse up revenge from ebon den with fell Alecto's	35
FTLN 3323	snake, for Doll is in. Pistol speaks nought but truth.	
FTLN 3324	FALSTAFF I will deliver her.	
	「Shouts within.」 (The trumpets sound.)	
	PISTOL	
FTLN 3325	There roared the sea, and trumpet-clangor sounds.	
	Enter the King and his train.	
	FALSTAFF	
FTLN 3326	God save thy Grace, King Hal, my royal Hal.	
	PISTOL	
FTLN 3327	The heavens thee guard and keep, most royal	40
FTLN 3328	imp of fame!	
FTLN 3329	FALSTAFF God save thee, my sweet boy!	
	KING	
FTLN 3330	My Lord Chief Justice, speak to that vain man.	
	CHIEF JUSTICE, <i>to Falstaff</i>	
FTLN 3331	Have you your wits? Know you what 'tis you	
FTLN 3332	speak?	45
	FALSTAFF, to the King	
FTLN 3333	My king, my Jove, I speak to thee, my heart!	
	KING	
FTLN 3334	I know thee not, old man. Fall to thy prayers.	
FTLN 3335	How ill white hairs becomes a fool and jester.	
FTLN 3336	I have long dreamt of such a kind of man,	
FTLN 3337	So surfeit-swelled, so old, and so profane;	50
FTLN 3338	But being awaked, I do despise my dream.	
FTLN 3339	Make less thy body hence, and more thy grace;	

ETI N. 22.40	Lagra compandizing Vnavy the arrays dath care	
FTLN 3340	Leave gormandizing. Know the grave doth gape For thee thrice wider than for other men.	
FTLN 3341		<i>E E</i>
FTLN 3342	Reply not to me with a fool-born jest.	55
FTLN 3343	Presume not that I am the thing I was,	
FTLN 3344	For God doth know—so shall the world perceive—	
FTLN 3345	That I have turned away my former self.	
FTLN 3346	So will I those that kept me company.	(0
FTLN 3347	When thou dost hear I am as I have been,	60
FTLN 3348	Approach me, and thou shalt be as thou wast,	
FTLN 3349	The tutor and the feeder of my riots.	
FTLN 3350	Till then I banish thee, on pain of death,	
FTLN 3351	As I have done the rest of my misleaders,	- -
FTLN 3352	Not to come near our person by ten mile.	65
FTLN 3353	For competence of life I will allow you,	
FTLN 3354	That lack of means enforce you not to evils.	
FTLN 3355	And, as we hear you do reform yourselves,	
FTLN 3356	We will, according to your strengths and qualities,	
FTLN 3357	Give you advancement. <i>To the Lord Chief Justice</i> .	70
FTLN 3358	Be it your charge, my lord,	
FTLN 3359	To see performed the tenor of my word.—	
FTLN 3360	Set on.	
	$\langle King \ [and \ his \ train \] \ exit. \rangle$	
FTLN 3361	FALSTAFF Master Shallow, I owe you a thousand pound.	
FTLN 3362	SHALLOW Yea, marry, Sir John, which I beseech you to	75
FTLN 3363	let me have home with me.	
FTLN 3364	FALSTAFF That can hardly be, Master Shallow. Do not	
FTLN 3365	you grieve at this. I shall be sent for in private to	
FTLN 3366	him. Look you, he must seem thus to the world.	
FTLN 3367	Fear not your advancements. I will be the man yet	80
FTLN 3368	that shall make you great.	
FTLN 3369	SHALLOW I cannot (well) perceive how, unless you	
FTLN 3370	(should) give me your doublet and stuff me out with	
FTLN 3371	straw. I beseech you, good Sir John, let me have five	
FTLN 3372	hundred of my thousand.	85
FTLN 3373	FALSTAFF Sir, I will be as good as my word. This that	
FTLN 3374	you heard was but a color.	

FTLN 3375 FTLN 3376 FTLN 3377 FTLN 3378	SHALLOW A color that I fear you will die in, Sir John. FALSTAFF Fear no colors. Go with me to dinner.— Come, lieutenant Pistol.—Come, Bardolph.—I shall be sent for soon at night. Enter The Lord Chief Justice and Prince John, with Officers.	90
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 3379	Go, carry Sir John Falstaff to the Fleet.	
FTLN 3380	Take all his company along with him.	
FTLN 3381	FALSTAFF My lord, my lord —	
	CHIEF JUSTICE	
FTLN 3382	I cannot now speak. I will hear you soon.—	95
FTLN 3383	Take them away.	
FTLN 3384	PISTOL Si fortuna me tormenta, spero (me) contenta.	
	$\lceil All \text{ but John of } \rceil \langle Lancaster \text{ and } \rceil$	
	Chief Justice\ exit.	
	JOHN OF LANCASTER	
FTLN 3385	I like this fair proceeding of the King's.	
FTLN 3386	He hath intent his wonted followers	
FTLN 3387	Shall all be very well provided for,	100
FTLN 3388	But all are banished till their conversations	
FTLN 3389	Appear more wise and modest to the world.	
FTLN 3390	CHIEF JUSTICE And so they are.	
ETT 31 2201	JOHN OF LANCASTER The Wing hoth collect his mortion out may lond	
FTLN 3391	The King hath called his parliament, my lord.	105
FTLN 3392	CHIEF JUSTICE He hath. JOHN OF LANCASTER	105
FTLN 3393	I will lay odds that, ere this year expire,	
FTLN 3394	We bear our civil swords and native fire	
FTLN 3395	As far as France. I heard a bird so sing,	
FTLN 3396	Whose music, to my thinking, pleased the King.	
FTLN 3397	Come, will you hence?	110
	$\langle They \ exit. \rangle$	110
	(They exti.)	

EPILOGUE

FTLN 3398	First my fear, then my curtsy, last my speech. My	
FTLN 3399	fear is your displeasure, my curtsy my duty, and my	
FTLN 3400	speech, to beg your pardons. If you look for a good	
FTLN 3401	speech now, you undo me, for what I have to say is	
FTLN 3402	of mine own making, and what indeed I should say	5
FTLN 3403	will, I doubt, prove mine own marring.	
FTLN 3404	But to the purpose, and so to the venture. Be it	
FTLN 3405	known to you, as it is very well, I was lately here in	
FTLN 3406	the end of a displeasing play to pray your patience	
FTLN 3407	for it and to promise you a better. I meant indeed to	10
FTLN 3408	pay you with this, which, if like an ill venture it	
FTLN 3409	come unluckily home, I break, and you, my gentle	
FTLN 3410	creditors, lose. Here I promised you I would be,	
FTLN 3411	and here I commit my body to your mercies. Bate	
FTLN 3412	me some, and I will pay you some, and, as most	15
FTLN 3413	debtors do, promise you infinitely. And so I kneel	
FTLN 3414	down before you, but, indeed, to pray for the	
FTLN 3415	Queen.	
FTLN 3416	If my tongue cannot entreat you to acquit me,	
FTLN 3417	will you command me to use my legs? And yet that	20
FTLN 3418	were but light payment, to dance out of your debt.	
FTLN 3419	But a good conscience will make any possible	
FTLN 3420	satisfaction, and so would I. All the gentlewomen	
FTLN 3421	here have forgiven me; if the gentlemen will not,	
FTLN 3422	then the gentlemen do not agree with the gentlewomen,	25
	243	

FTLN 3423	which was never seen (before) in such an	
FTLN 3424	assembly.	
FTLN 3425	One word more, I beseech you: if you be not too	
FTLN 3426	much cloyed with fat meat, our humble author will	
FTLN 3427	continue the story, with Sir John in it, and make	30
FTLN 3428	you merry with fair Katherine of France, where, for	
FTLN 3429	anything I know, Falstaff shall die of a sweat, unless	
FTLN 3430	already he be killed with your hard opinions; for	
FTLN 3431	Oldcastle died (a) martyr, and this is not the man.	
FTLN 3432	My tongue is weary; when my legs are too, I will bid	35
FTLN 3433	you good night.	